

玄幻

凤香印

天衣



17K 小说网 .COM

玄幻

苍穹纪元

风青阳 著



Swallowing the Heavens 1 to 40

Table of Contents

1. [Swallowing the Heavens 1 to 40](#)
 1. [Table of Contents](#)
 2. [Chapter 1: God's Eye](#)
 3. [Chapter 2: Three Thousand Celestial Kingdoms](#)
 4. [Chapter 3: Jindan Celestial](#)
 5. [Chapter 4: The Death of Wu Yu](#)
 6. [Chapter 5: Godpearl Metal](#)
 7. [Chapter 6: Indestructible Vajra Body](#)
 8. [Chapter 7: A Night of Murder](#)
 9. [Chapter 8: To Heaven Palace](#)
 10. [Chapter 9: Celestial Ascendance Podium](#)
 11. [Chapter 10: Let Fate Decide Whether We Live or Die](#)
 12. [Chapter 11: The Demonic Monkey Evolves!](#)
 13. [Chapter 12: Qi Condensing Pill, Daemon Suppressing Sword](#)
 14. [Chapter 13: The Big Battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium](#)
 15. [Chapter 14: Slaying Whales in the East Sea](#)
 16. [Chapter 15: I Swear I'm Not Human](#)
 17. [Chapter 16: The Big Battle of Heaven's Cry Peak](#)
 18. [Chapter 17: Rebirth from the Ashes](#)
 19. [Chapter 18: 7 Days & 7 Nights](#)
 20. [Chapter 19: Worshipping the Ancestor's of East Yue Wu](#)
 21. [Chapter 20: The Golden Quartz Meridian & the Monkey in the Heart](#)
 22. [Chapter 21: Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique](#)
 23. [Chapter 22: Drunken Sword](#)
 24. [Chapter 23 – Glazed Asgard](#)
 25. [Chapter 24 – Golden Flames Sweep](#)
 26. [Chapter 25 – Celestial Kingdom Supervisor](#)
 27. [Chapter 26 – Zhongyuan Daoist Sect](#)
 28. [Chapter 27 – Celestial Monkey Transformation](#)

29. [Chapter 28 – Demon Monkey’s Drop Of Blood](#)
30. [Chapter 29 – Mo Shishu](#)
31. [Chapter 30 – The Thunder Control Divine Skill](#)
32. [Chapter 31 – Thunder Demon Spirit Possession](#)
33. [Chapter 32 – Peerless Celestial Monkey](#)
34. [Chapter 33 – The Fifth Disciple of the Sect Leader](#)
35. [Chapter 34 – Demon Emperor Golden Staff](#)
36. [Chapter 35 – Swords Stone Gate](#)
37. [Chapter 36 – Sumeru Pouch](#)
38. [Chapter 37 – Prince Yuan Chen](#)
39. [Chapter 38 – I Am Sun Wudao](#)
40. [Chapter 39 – Jiang Junlin](#)
41. [Chapter 40 – Devil Dao](#)

Chapter 1: God's Eye

My translation debut! Help yourselves!

“Wu Yu! As the prince heir, how could you commit such an outrageous and despicable act!”

“You’re the greatest disgrace our kingdom, East Yue Wu, has ever seen! The great and mighty name of the kingdom has been wrecked in your hands!”

“If the Previous Emperor was still alive, he would be angered to death by the animalistic and predatory act you have committed!”

The derogatory and denouncing comments came from everywhere, sharp as whistles, filled with rage and anger. Wu Yu wanted to open his eyes, but no matter how hard he tried, his eyelids wouldn’t open, so heavy it was as if it was carrying rocks. His brain was shaking, splitting apart from the noise, and any attempts at moving his unresponsive body was futile.

“This must be a dream! I remember that tomorrow is the crowning ceremony, for my ascendance to the throne; I must be sleeping, I have to wake up early tomorrow...”

“Hmmm....”

Wu Yu finally managed to prop up his eyes, and looked around with a glazed expression. He seemed to be on a bed; maybe it really was a dream after all.

It was winter, and even with his Martial Ability, Wu Yu still felt chilled to the bone.

“Hmmm...!”

Under the pain of the migraine, under the blurry vision, he managed to make out the shape of a woman on the other side of the bed. She was half naked, luscious white skin out for all to see, had an extremely seductive face, and her

hair fell down in cascades over her firmly tipped breasts, causing her to look even more attractive.

It seemed that the beauty was on the same bed as himself, but she had shrunk herself to one corner, staring at him fearfully, delicate face filled with tearstains.

“Xi Fei!”

Wu Yu was stunned!

Xi Fei was the woman of the Previous Emperor, his father, but he disliked her with a passion. What was she doing in his dream? Also, why was he only in his underwear? His head then started hurting so hard he fainted again.

“Hua!”

A cold bucket of water was upended over Wu Yu, and he woke up with a start. He was no longer on the bed, but on the cold, water soaked ground, dressed in rags. Surrounding him was a crowd, all staring at him with either disappointed, savage or loathful eyes.

“This isn’t a fucking dream!”

The thought exploded like a bomb in his head. Even though he was nauseatic, fatigued and drowsy, he could determine that whatever was happening definitely wasn’t a dream.

“Tomorrow is the day of my coronation as Emperor, so I should be in my bed. But why are there rainbow phoenixes engraved on the side posts of the bed? This isn’t my bed! This is the “Xi He Hall”, Xi Fei’s palace! Why am I here?”

Gazing over the crowd, Wu Yu found Xi Fei mobbed by maids, her once half naked bodice now wrapped in a Leopard Fur Jacket.

The law of East Yue Wu stated that all ministers and vassals are prohibited to enter the Harem Palace, but here they were, surrounding him so tightly that there was no room for him to escape if he had to. Something improbable must have happened for the rules to be so blatantly disregarded, and thinking of what just happened, he knew that he was in big, goddamn trouble.

“Shit!”

As he was about to stand up, he found out he didn’t have the strength to. All

his muscles were drained of energy, such that even lying down took a lot out of him.

“Wu Yu! Yo-Yo-You! You beast! Xi Fei is your stepmother! How could you try to rape her! If we didn’t discover this soon enough, the dignity of our kingdom would have been completely humiliated!”

“A scandal! What a scandal! Oh Previous Emperor, why has our kingdom been struck by such misfortune! Such shame!”

The ministers and vassals, WU YU’s ministers and vassals, all started cursing him one by one, each and every insult a scathing and savage stab into his heart.

“Like I said many times before, Wu Yu is not fit to be Prince Heir, let alone Emperor. He misuses the military, constantly starting unnecessary wars, is violent, and ignores the laws, doing whatever he pleases. He is lacking in the art of rule, focusing instead on the pursuance of Martial Arts... this would’ve been the Emperor of our kingdom if we hadn’t discovered this scandal today!”

The person who uttered this was a prince, who had a high status in East Yue Wu. He had never liked Wu Yu, so it unsurprising he was slandering him.

Wu Yu couldn’t help but smile coldly in his heart. The truth behind the so called “misuse of the military” was he had to repel the invasions from a neighboring kingdom, and in doing so, counterattacked and took away from them ¼ of their land! He was only 14 at the time, and was dubbed the “Teenage War God”.

And the so called “lack in the art of rule” was because his art of rule was different from others. He would use his Martial Arts to lead his kingdom! Wu Yu was only 15 years of age this year, but he had already become a 5th Heavenly Stage Martial Artist!

In the same age group, nobody in the kingdom or any of the neighbouring kingdoms was able to compare with him. He was the undisputable number 1 genius! He was so talented that some people predicted he would rush all the way up to the 10th Heaven Stage of Martial Arts, “Tong Shen” to become a Martial Sovereign!

In the ten thousand years that East Yue Wu had existed, in the numerous

Emperors that had taken the throne, probably only the Founding Emperor (or the First Emperor) had the talent to compare with Wu Yu.

But now, according to this prince, Wu Yu was a great misuser of military.

“Heng (Onomatopoeia)! I too do not feel he is fit to be the Prince Heir. If Prince Heir Rong hadn't died too early, the role of Prince Heir wouldn't have been for him to take. Furthermore, his mother was born in the mountains, evidence of her low status. If not for the Previous Emperor's love, the title of Prince Heir would not have been Wu Yu's. This Wu Yu has the blood of the wild flowing in his veins, so it is no wonder he is so vulgar, so underbred, and judging from his actions today, so brutish, like a wild animal!

The owner of this voice was a Marshall, but he could not be compared to Wu Yu in terms of Martial Art ability or status.

The Marshall had a son, an incompetent degenerate, who was always fucking around in East Yue Wu. There was one time, by chance, Wu Yu caught him slaughtering innocent civilians and raping women. What he did next was so unthinkable that Wu Yu nearly coughed blood up. The retarded fellow actually tried to gift the woman he was raping to him! And of course, Wu Yu fell into a rage, hanging the fellow on top of the City Gates for three days and nights, to be punished under the baking sun. From then on, all the degenerates in the kingdom were terrified to the balls of their feet. Nobody messed or fucked around in the kingdom ever since.

By now, Wu Yu had already worked out that he had been framed. There must be a perpetrator behind the framing, using Xi Fei to stop him from ascendance to the throne, but who was it? Who had the ability to win against him in this battle of wits and power?

To speak the truth, nobody could surpass Wu Yu in either means or combat ability. Since the death of the Previous Emperor, nobody had the courage to challenge him, because he treated evil people or people who went against him like his life sworn enemies, and because he had great popularity with the commoners.

“Hao Tian Shangxian*!”

The piercing shout of this name caused Wu Yu's head to rock.

“Hao Tian Shangxian, he...” Wu Yu was startled. He felt that he should have heard wrong, but he hadn’t, because Hao Tian Shangxian was a Celestial human! Over 100 years old, he was the Protector Shangxian of the kingdom.

The difference between a Celestial and a Mortal was like Heaven and Earth. Even if Wu Yu managed to breakthrough to the 10th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts and become a Martial Sovereign, he would never be able to compare with a Celestial, because Celestial’s were Celestial’s; They were the saviours and messiahs sent from the Heavens to prevent disasters and save the common people!

A Protector Shangxian usually wouldn’t participate in wars between mortals; their role was to protect the people from wicked evildoers, so only in cases such as when a daemon was terrorising mortals would they appear. Even the Previous Emperor had to be respectful to the Protector Shangxian and listen to as well as take orders from him during various occasions.

To think the Protector Shangxian was here....

Hao Tian’s entrance caused the furious and savage the vassal’s had to turn to respect and sincerity.

Wu Yu lifted his head to look, just to see a body shape appear in front of the gates of the Palace. The appearance was so fast, so instantaneous that he could not perceive any signs of movement.

That was Hao Tian Shangxian, and possibly the only being alive that had Wu Yu’s reverence. Although he was over 100 years old, he still had the look of a teenager with a ruddy complexion, body straight and filled with energy. Even though his hair and eyebrows were blindingly white, it still could not cover his exuberant vitality. This was the awe-inspiring and righteous mannerism that only Celestial humans possessed!

Hao Tian Shangxian was wearing a snow white Daoist* robe, engraved with many intricate Bagua* motifs, and held a duster* on his right hand, to fend off all daemons and demons. His attire was very striking, but Wu Yu found his eyes even more prominent; they shined brighter than the stars in the sky, so bright that no evil could escape his notice.

“Welcome Hao Tian Shangxian!”

All the ministers and vassals, maids and butlers, as well as the vixen Fu Xi kneeled on the ground, bowing low to honour his arrival.

“What happened today, I know already.”

Hao Tian Shangxian’s voice was surprisingly youthful and sonorous, filled with power and a certain kind of hypnotism that caused the human mind to stir. This was the voice of a celestial.

“Shangxian, please punish this evildoer!” cried Fu Xi, with tears streaming down her face and a shuddering body.

“I will. The ruler of a kingdom cannot be wicked.” replied Hao Tian, staring at Wu Yu with a pair of searing eyes, making him feel like he really did something despicable and disgraceful, nearly causing him to confess to the crime he did not commit. “Wu Yu, this time you have committed a grave mistake. The Dao of Celestials finds the act you have committed to be intolerable, so I, with permission from the Heavens, will strip you of the status of Prince Heir, as well as your right to be Emperor. Also, from now on, you will be stripped of your Martial Ability, and will be exiled to walk among the Earth, to learn how to be human again!”

Upon hearing Hao Tian’s verdict, the ministers and vassals all cried “Shangxian, what a wise decision!”

To Wu Yu, the penance was incredibly tragic and brutal, but he remained calm and did not cry nor scream, containing his rage and anger inside his heart. However, the rage and indignation inside his heart was like a volcano waiting to erupt, the lava moving around with increasing momentum. This was hatred deep from the pits of hell.

This is fate! Fate!

Wu Yu could not help but smile bitterly; he knew the truth now.

“In this kingdom, nobody could threaten me to such degree except for him, Hao Tian Shangxian! He must’ve have been the one behind this whole scheme! Ah, I understand now. If Hao Tian Shangxian wants me to die, then this is fate! I cannot not die!”

“Today, God wants to destroy me!” he laughed, causing the crowd to look at

him as if he had become crazy.

“Impudent! How could you lose control and laugh loudly in front of Hao Tian Shangxian!”

The disappointment in Wu Yu from the congregation became even greater.

“Sigh... Wu Yu is the misfortune of our great East Yue Wu!”

Insults and slander against Wu Yu permeated the air, but he shook them off like an irritating itch. His world had already collapsed, his life had already ended; why bother with what other people had to say about him?

“Wu Yu, I gift you Soul Severing Powder”

“Gift”? How excruciatingly funny! You have “gifted” me the extinguishment of 10 years of hard work and passion! Tomorrow, I would’ve ascended and become Emperor, ruler of millions, but that reality has become dream, because my “soul” has now been “severed”, my Martial Ability stripped. Useless... Yes, that is what I’ve become.

Hao Tian Shangxian still looked like the paragon of justice, all righteous and bright, but in Wu Yu’s eyes, he’d already fallen off the altar of the God’s.

“Hao Tian was never a God. He was just the strongest man in the kingdom; Ah, I get it now. East Yue Wu, it was never my father’s, never mine. It was always his!”

Under Hao Tian’s watchful gaze, Wu Yu swallowed the “Soul Severing Powder”. 10 years of torturous hard work and fiery passion, all down the drain.

Deep night.

It was time for Wu Yu’s exilement. A prison wagon was waiting outside the Palace Gates for him, to take him to battlefields to act as a meat shield, cannon fodder. With his current Martial Ability, staying alive for more than ten days would be an absolute miracle.

“Yu!”

All of a sudden, a familiar and gentle voice broke the silence of the night.

Inside the cold carriage, Wu Yu’s eyes burst open, to see a woman constantly

shaking the wagon, her eyes bloodshot, her face full of tearstains.

“Wu You.”

The dignified woman who was shaking the carriage was Wu Yu’s sister, nicknamed the “No Worries Princess”. Even though they were born under different mothers, Wu Yu both respected and loved her, because she was the only person who understood him in the kingdom. His mother died early when he was still young child, so Wu You was his only family left, acting as his surrogate mother.

“Why?! Why!!” Wu You cried, whilst shuddering in the cold, windy winter breeze. Her heart hurt from the sorrow, as if somebody had just stabbed there and left the knife inside.

“Sister, what happened today was not me messing about; the Heavens wanted to obliterate me, you understand?” Wu Yu stretched his hands out the cage bars, grasping Wu You’s shuddering, pale hand. The winter wind was keen and piercingly cold, the night dark and forgiving, but being able to experience the comfort of human warmth during his final hours caused the calm and resigned Wu Yu to cry.

“I don’t understand, but I believe you.” Wu You sorrowfully shook her head.

“That is enough for me. I have not done anything wrong or awful; It’s just Heaven is unfair, so you do not have to feel so heartbroken. Sister, I hope to be your brother again in my next life!”

“Next life, next life...” pondered Wu You, what did that mean? Then, the meaning behind those words hit her like a battering ram, causing her to stagger and collapse onto the floor in immense agony and melancholy.

And at that time, the soldiers in charge of sending Wu Yu away shouted, grabbed hold of the prison wagon, and started pulling it one step and one step away from the Palace. They were off.

The carriage’s wooden wheels chafed against the rock tiles of the carriage, producing “ka ka” sounds, like the rapid beating of a heart.

Wu Yu looked back, to see Wu You chasing after him, but because she had a weak body, she was quickly left in the dust.

“Hua la!”

Suddenly, snow started falling from the sky.

Wu Yu raised his head, to see snowflakes, incredibly alluring and bright in the dark. Stars could also be seen in the beautiful winter night, shining and blinking like God’s eyes, watching over the land.

Snowflakes soon started to cake Wu Yu’s body, and like that, he left the capital of East Wu Yu into the unknown.

*Shangxian – A title for Celestials.

*Bagua – The [Bagua](#) is a Daoist motif showing the eight trigrams that represent the fundamental principles of reality.

*Duster – The duster Hao Tian was holding isn’t what you think it looks like. It looks like [this](#).

Chapter 2: Three Thousand Celestial Kingdoms

May I present to you guys Chapter 2!

Dong Sheng God Continent, Three Thousand Celestial Kingdoms!

Each Celestial Kingdom had its own Protector Shangxian to ward off evils.

East Yue Wu was one of the Three Thousand Celestial Kingdoms.

Deep night, in the one of the Harem Palace's of the Royal City "Xi He Palace", the ministers and vassals have disbanded after the banishment of Wu Yu.

The Palace was gloomy and dark, illuminated only with a single candle. The dim light flickered, casting dancing shadows across the room. If you noticed closely, you would be able to make out the shadow of a woman, ghost-like and evil in the night.

Xi Fei had already dressed up, her seductive face no longer wretched and pitiful but cold and devilish. However, deep in the recesses of her eyes lay a tinkling of emotion, the unmistakable glint of excitement and happiness.

"Thanks Master for today's incident!" said Xi Fei, kneeling on the floor and bowing down low.

"You're my student; stripping the Martial Ability of a Prince Heir is only a little mundane task to a Celestial Daoist like me. It's not worth mentioning. Tomorrow, spread the word that I have appointed Yuan Hao as the New Emperor."

Xi Fei was the only person in "Xi He Palace"; Hao Tian Shangxian's youthful and indifferent voice seemed to come from thin air!

Yuan Hao, was Xi Fei's eldest son.

"Please accept my thanks once again, Master. Little Xi will service you well!" Xi Fei shuddered with excitement, beautiful eyes flashing.

“Even though Yuan Hao does not have enough talent to practice Martial Arts, he still has my blood flowing in his veins, so I cannot let him waste away his life. To let him become a Mortal Emperor.... ah, that’s a good idea!”

If their conversation was to be leaked out, it would absolutely shock the world. Yuan Hao, was in fact Hao Tian Shangxian’s son!

The relationship between the two was certainly fucked up.

“Master, I’m still worried. Since young, that Wu Yu was the producer of miracles, and the means by which he accomplishes things is very effective. Even though his Martial Prowess has been stripped and he has been exiled, I am afraid he will make a comeback!”

Under the dim light of the lone candle, Xi Fei’s eyes shone red with bloodlust. She needed Wu Yu dead.

“Do not worry, I have already sent Wan Qing to assassinate him. I promise you that he’ll not live to see the next day. When I do things, I finish them. Completely. Who wants a snake biting their back when they’re in the direst of situations?”

“Senior Sister Wan Qing!”

Xi Fei shuddered at the name. Wan Qing was just too... horrifying.

Many people disappear suddenly in the dark depths of the Royal Palace. Myths say that a big snake resides within the Royal Palace, occasionally coming out of its hiding place to swallow people alive.

.....

“Ka Cha! Ka Cha!

Based from the sounds and the violent shaking of the prison carriage, Wu Yu determined that he was currently traveling on a mountain road.

After swallowing and digesting the “Soul Severing Powder” for a night, he could feel that his Martial Arts foundation had been destroyed.

To reach the 5th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts, one had to forge their muscles, grind their tendons, refine their bones, strengthen their organs and change their blood. After changing his blood, Wu Yu had the strength and power

of 50 battle horses, frequently charging by the lonesome in the battlefield, smashing into enemy ranks, unstoppable!

But now, his muscles, battle blood, tendons, bones and organs have all been deprived of their former strength, leaving behind a weak body unsuitable for combat.

Wu Yu opened his eyes to the dimness of dawn and daybreak. The sun hadn't risen, and the surroundings was murky and overcast, but he could glimpse the shapes of around 100 soldiers, responsible for sending him to the frontiers, where most of the battlefields were.

Walking next to the carriage was a tall, tan 100 man squad leader, expression indifferent and apathetic. He was in charge of looking over Wu Yu, to ensure that he did not do any funny stuff, like escape.

The carriage trundled on, and soon the company entered the forest. And right at that moment, all hell broke loose!

That surprised Wu Yu, so he raised his head to see what had happened. The rock path they were currently on was very narrow, so the contingent was quite spread out, and because the sky hadn't really brightened yet, he could not see what was happening in the front.

"This stench!"

The stench jogged Wu Yu's memory of the time when a daemon, under the manipulations of a neighboring kingdom tried to assassinate him on the battlefield. Of course he'd fought back and killed it, and when it revealed its true form after death, he discovered it was a spider.

"Daemon!" It must be a daemon! No other living thing could have this stench!

"Snake! Snake!"

Tragic and shrill screams came from the front of the troop, causing chaos to run amok.

"It's just a wild beast, don't be afraid; brothers, come with me to slay it!" The 100 man squad leader by Wu Yu's side shouted, drawing his knife and arming his shield, coordinating soldiers to charge forward in formation. His act stabilised

the situation, but the shrieks and screams did not stop; in fact, they just got more and more harrowing.

The speed of the daemon was quite fast; Wu Yu stood up, dilated his pupils, and... he saw it!

It was a fifty feet long snake, wide as a tree trunk, and had a three feet long forked tongue. Black poison dripped from the sharp tip of its teeth, landing on rocks and the earth, leaving behind numerous little holes.

The aura of the daemon permeated the air, horrifying and uncomfortable on the skin.

Tear!

The soldiers hacked at the monstrosity with their swords, slashed it with their spears, but it was futile! None of their attacks had broken open its skin and wounded it! On the contrary, the snake, who had already developed a human's intelligence, moved about unhindered, tearing, smashing and ramming into the soldiers. In a few heartbeats, many of the 100 soldiers in the company had either been eaten alive, torn apart or rammed to pieces by the daemon's tail.

“Run, Run!!”

It was Hell on Earth!

Even the 100 man squad captain had been devoured alive!

There were only 15 soldiers left, and each of them quickly put down their weapons to escape; the other soldiers, under the ravaging of the snake, were left with ripped bodies and minced bodies, lifeless on the bloodied ground.

“It's looking at me.”

Wu Yu noticed that even though the snake was slaughtering the soldiers, it had always put its attention on him.

And as expected, it did not chase after the escaping soldiers, but slithered towards Wu Yu, indicating its objective.

On the Mortal Realm, there were Mortals, and there were also Celestials, who have descended from Heaven to slay sinners.

On the Mortal Realm, there were beasts as well, who absorb the essence of Heaven and Earth to evolve into Daemons, terrorising the people; this snake must be one of them, and it is quite obvious it had lived for some time.

The snake came closer, and its stench pounced at Wu Yu's nose, incredibly nauseatic and disgusting.

“Fu!”

And at that moment, the Daemon changed into human form; Wu Yu did not expect that to happen!

The enormous pale green snake started to shrink, its flesh and scales started to transform, and in the end, a woman in a pale green robe appeared right before his very eyes. Her hair was messy and long, face narrow and lengthy, chin sharp, eyes slanted, and though her body was slender and graceful, she emitted a snakish aura that induced terror.

“Wan Qing.”

Wu Yu recognised her on first sight; she was the student of Hao Tian Shangxian, and was constantly seen by his side. This recognition, however, had quite the impact on Wu Yu.

“Hao Tian Shangxian, a Protector Shangxian, has the role of protecting the common man by slaying evils. Hahahaha! I wouldn't have guessed that he would raise a snake daemon!”

“In the capital city of my East Yue Wu, 1368 people have disappeared without a trace. No matter how hard we tried to trace the kidnappers, no results turned up; they must have been used to feed Wan Qing!”

Wan Qing's appearance led to Wu Yu understanding one thing; Hao Tian Shangxian wanted him dead.

She clambered atop the wagon, and the ghastly daemon aura she emitted was like a pair of hands, constantly molesting and touching his body.

“Wu Yu, we meet again.” said Wang Qing, sticking out her blood red and narrow forked tongue to lick her rouge coloured lips. She stared at Wu Yu with her dark green eyes, as if he was some kind of tasty snack she was going to feed

upon.

Upon noticing that he was calm and indifferent, she smiled gruesomely “Today marks the day of your death; You should thank my Master, because you can now go to the Yellow River* to keep your father company! You know, to kill him, I had to waste many of my Master’s pills and medicines.”

“Oh.”

No wonder father, who was still in his prime, aged and died within a year.

The animosity against Hao Tian and those involved for murdering his father was like a roiling sea of blood, surging and battering against his body, trying to break free.

“Hao Tian, Xi Fei these two bastards; ah, it’s not surprising.”

Father, even though he was Emperor, had a lot of women and children, so the love Wu Yu could get from him was limited. But father was father, so against all odds, he let him ascend the throne; this was love!

“Unfortunately, you don’t have the opportunity to pay a debt of gratitude.”

Wan Qing did not give mercy.

“Die!”

She extended her two hands, and those two hands held at least 10,000 jin* of power! Enough to rip Wu Yu into shreds!

“You daemon!”

Suddenly, a shout came from the sky, and a golden light flashed past.

“A Daoist Celestial!”

At that instant, Wan Qing’s face became incredibly pale; without saying another word, she used her horrifying speed to race into the surrounding forest, not even bothering to finish off Wu Yu. Encountering a big river, she jumped in to hide in its dark depths, body shuddering from fear, fleeing for her life!

Wu Yu, who was facing imminent death, was shocked by the change in events.

“Shua!”

A Daoist suddenly appeared in front of Wu Yu's eyes out of thin air. His raven black hair waved in the wind, with deep, profound eyes, the very image of a handsome middle aged man. Deep within the the recesses of his eyes Sword Qi* could be seen sweeping about, and his whole body emitted Sword Qi that twined around him, causing dust and dirt to swirl about his vicinity.

“Shit, I let that sinner escape, and have let it cause such a catastrophe!”

Hope!

Wu Yu saw light at the end of the tunnel!

Because of Wan Qing, a Celestial had arrived! He must grasp hold of this opportunity!

*Yellow River – It's the place where dead souls rest in Chinese Mythology; basically, it's like hell

*Jin – Jin is a measurement of mass/weight (depends on whether you want to be a normal person or an absolute scientific retard) used by the Chinese; the conversion rate is 1 Jin : 0.6048 Kilograms.

*Qi – It's kind of hard to translate this; It literally translates to Sword Air in that example, but means Sword Aura. I couldn't use Sword Aura because then the whole sentence wouldn't make sense, so I just stuck with the Pinyin.

Chapter 3: Jindan Celestial

Chapter 3 is out baby!

The Celestial naturally noticed Wu Yu, and with the point of a finger, the prison wagon broke open.

Even though Wu Yu was injured severely and greatly fatigued, he staggered of the carriage, and crawled towards the Celestial. Yes, even if he had to crawl, he must get to the Celestial, because it meant the chance of a new life, of revenge, of a comeback! Bowing down so low his face touched the floor, Wu Yu mustered all his strength, and shouted “Celestial Shangxian! My name is Wu Yu, the Prince Heir of East Yue Wu; I’d been framed, the victim of a sinister plot, and have been reduced to this lowly state. Please, please, please Shangxian, accept me as your student!”

Wu Yu raised his head, to see the Shangxian gazing at him, his face void of any emotion.

“Please accept me as your student! I swear will dedicate my whole lifetime to repaying your kindness!”

After encountering such a calamity and uncovering so many horrible truths previously hidden from him, such as the murder of his father and the devouring of his citizens by Wan Qing, Wu Yu was in the lowest point of his life; if somebody was willing to help him out of this pit of despair, he would definitely die trying to repay the debt of gratitude.

He was always like that; if somebody was kind to him, he would be kind back. If somebody was bad to him, however, he would retaliate.

“Master! Student Wu Yu kowtows and bows to Master! I hereby swear to Master that your gratitude will never be forgotten, and that I will serve you as your faithful servant for the rest of my life. “

Wu Yu knew that if he didn't grasp hold of this opportunity, he'd have no hope of revenge, of vengeance, stuck a mere Mortal until his last breath. This was the final straw; only success could be tolerated!

"Your foundation for cultivation isn't bad, good enough to be accepted into Celestial Sect's, but because you've digested Soul Severing Powder, cultivation is just impossible for you now. Therefore, I can't accept you as my apprentice. To become my, Feng Xue Ya's pupil, you'd have to have at least talent found only in one out of a hundred thousand people.

Feng Xue Ya's words came as a bolt out of the blue to Wu Yu.

He shouldn't have been blinded by hope. He should've thought of this. Of course Feng Xue Ya was going to reject him; he can't even cultivate now! But, he was not a person who gave up easily, because he believed persistence was key to success!

"Feng Xue Ya Celestial, as long as you let me stay by your side, I'd be willing to be your dog, your horse, your slave... I'd be willing to do anything!"

Soul Severing Powder.... Ah, it's not figurative. It really does sever souls.

"You've been victim to Soul Severing Powder, but I do not want to intervene with the happenings of Mortals... Fine, fine, fine! I'll let you in my Celestial Sect, to be my apprentice Yan Li's servant."

Under his drowsiness, Wu Yu instantly felt that he was flying above the clouds, as light and free as a bird. That was something that not even Hao Tian Shangxian could do!

"I have succeeded!" he cried in his head, before blacking out with a wide smile on his face.

.....

"Pa Pa!

The sound of sizzling charcoal and crackling fire came into being, getting louder and louder each passing second.

"Hao Tian Shangxian! Xi Fei, that bitch!"

Wu Yu woke with a start, eyes opened wide, face swamped with sweat. He

looked around, to find himself in unfamiliar surroundings. Oh yeah, hadn't Feng Xue Ya Celestial brought him back to his Celestial Sect?

“Ah, a dream.”

He was currently in a wooden house, simple but clean, furnished with a table, a set of chairs, a closet and a bed. Nothing fancy, but quite sufficient for Wu Yu's needs. A fire blazed in a stove at the center of the room, bringing warmth and dispersing the cold.

He took a deep breath, and released a long sigh of relaxation. Even though his body was still weak and exhausted, he still felt incredibly comfortable and cosy; there was just something in the air here that nourished his tired heart.

“If I'm not wrong, this should be **Spiritual Qi***. The Mortal Realm definitely does not have such rich Spiritual Qi. If I cultivated here since young, I would've been a 7th Heavenly Stage Martial Artist today, or even an 8th Heavenly Stage Martial Artist!”

Wu Yu cheered joyfully in his heart, because he was now 100% sure that he was in a Celestial Sect, safe from being hunted down by Hao Tian. But, he had matured a lot since then, so he knew that he would not be able to enjoy the benefits being in a Celestial Sect could bring. After all, he had taken Soul Severing Powder, never to be able to cultivate again! And, if he remembered correctly, he was to be a servant to Yan Li, Snow Cliff's pupil. The duties of a servant should include feeding animals, watering plants, chopping wood and doing normal housework chores.

“Ta Ta!”

Suddenly, the sound of footsteps could be heard, and with a squeak, the door of the wooden house was lightly pushed open. Wu Yu raised his head to see a skinny, hunchbacked old man enter through the entrance. He was short, shorter than Wu Yu by a head, had messy silver hair and wrinkles all over his face. His eyes were a little bit turbid and muddy, as if struck by the “curse” of old age, but had a strict facial expression, seemingly conveying his dislike of Wu Yu.

“Ah, you're awake. Hurry up and get dressed, we've got work to do.” The old man said sternly, a pair of muddy eyes staring at Wu Yu, making him feel a tad bit scared and uncomfortable.

Wu Yu sized up the old man, and noticed that he wore a necklace of red thread, with something hanging off it. It was a two inch long metal staff, with gold coloured ends, seemingly made out of real gold, and a black center, seemingly made out of **Crow Metal***

“This place is a Celestial Sect, and since you’ve come, you’ll spend your whole life here. If you want to stay alive in here, you have to know the Celestial Sect’s rules; The upper brass have stationed you under my wing, so don’t talk too much, be diligent, follow the rules, and don’t give me trouble.” The old man tossed a dark blue tunic to Wu Yu, then went into the neighbouring room, leaving him behind to sort things out.

After hearing that, Wu Yu now understood that Feng Xue Ya had posted him here at Yan Li’s to be a servant, and Yan Li had stationed him under the old man’s wing, to help out the old man.

“That old man doesn’t seem to like me?” he pondered, whilst swiftly changing into the tunic. By now, the aftereffects of taking the Soul Severing Powder had worn off, so he’d sobered up quite a bit, but his damaged body was still like a withered old tree, riddled with cuts and holes.

A moment later, the old man came back into the room, carrying a steaming bowl of soup, which he handed over to Wu Yu. “Drink.”

Wu Yu was born in the Royal Palace, so with just a glance he knew that the soup contained old ginseng, which requires a powerful flame to brew well. This kind of soup was very precious, and because there was only the two of them in the room, he believed that the old man brewed the soup for him. Evidently, the old man was just a person with a cold exterior, but a warm and kind interior; he didn’t dislike Wu Yu.

“Thanks old uncle, my name’s Wu Yu; what do I call you?” Since he had come to this place, where he was safe from any threats that may come from Hao Tian and Co., Wu Yu was filled with the desire to explore the Celestial Sect, a place that he had heard only in myths and legends.

“You can call me Sun Wudao.” The old man replied, urging him to hurry up.

“Uncle Sun!” Wu Yu rapidly drained the bowl of soup, feeling incredibly refreshed after. The soup had replenished some of his energy cells, severely

depleted after yesterday's events, so it must be the one of the Celestial Sect's spiritual medicine to have such a great effect.

“Follow me!”

At that time, Uncle Sun had already pushed open the door of the wooden house, walking out with a brisk face. Wu Yu raced after him hurriedly, determined not to be left behind; after all, Uncle Sun had been very kind to him, so naturally Wu Yu must listen to what he said!

Wu Yu stepped out of the wooden house, looked around, and was instantly shocked. Winter was currently in high season, so the thousand mountains in view should be buried in heavy snow, but that was not the case here! No signs of snow and sheet were in sight; the mountains were displayed in their majestic green splendour, peaks spiralling into the heavens. What added to the sight was the Celestial Mist that pervaded the mountain range, mystical and magical. Amongst the Celestial Mist, countless contours and outlines of grand, vast and intricate palaces and pavilions could be seen; the Royal Palace of the of East Yue Wu was nothing compared to these magnificent structures.

They were so beautiful that Wu Yu thought he really was in Heaven!

Wu Yu was currently standing on the mountainside of a lush green mountain, surrounded by a myriad of green rock paths that stretched to the peak, to the bottom, and many other places. Sun Wudao was already on one of the green rock paths that snaked to the bottom of the mountain, walking briskly, so Wu Yu hastily followed after, stepping stride after stride on the moss covered green stone. He didn't forget to breathe in the surrounding Spiritual Qi, which instantly made him feel as if he was in heaven, surpassing the Mortal Realm.

“Paradise!” Blood started to pulse in his veins, and excitement washed over him like a tidal wave.

“Before we go to the “Celestial Beast Garden” and start work, I'll give you a brief description of our Celestial Sect. This Celestial Sect, is a Celestial Sect for Cultivators, but it's quite different from normal ones, because many of the Daoist techniques we cultivate here are related with the usage of swords, which is known as Sword Cultivation. Our Celestial Sect is very domineering, and its name is : **“Sword to Heaven Sect*”!**”

To Heaven; opening up a pathway to Heaven! Indeed, the name was domineering, emitting an aura that caused Wu Yu to think of Feng Xue Ya Celestial's golden sword. The Sword Qi radiated from it truly could open up a path to Heaven.

“The Sword to Heaven Sect is rooted in land with the richest Spiritual Qi of several Mortal Kingdoms, the mountain range “Blue Surge Mountain Range”! The mountain range is half the size of a Kingdom, and provides sanctuary to countless Cultivators who cultivate here, in hope of becoming a real Heavenly Celestial, a True Celestial!”

“Mortals are forbidden from stepping into the Blue Surge Mountain Range, and in their eyes, the Blue Surge Mountain Range is Heaven itself. And you, Wu Yu, are currently on a mountain named “Yan Li Mountain”, one of the mountains in the Blue Surge Mountain Range!”

Sun Wudao's words made Wu Yu's blood boil; Ah, so this is what a Celestial Sect looked like!

“You have to know, the Sword to Heaven Sect is enormous, and the Sect Leader was the one who brought you here yesterday. He's quite mysterious, always away and missing, off to who knows where, but he's a Jindan Celestial out of the legends! Very close to becoming a Real Celestial! And then our sect also has countless Elders, and previous generation Cultivators.”

Feng Xue Ya Celestial was actually the Sect Leader?!

“After that, we have our numerous Disciples, and amongst them, the best and strongest Disciples are known as the “Core Disciples”. Apart from them, there are also the “Exterior Disciples”, who are a 100 times more numerous than “Core Disciples”.

“However, these Cultivators are not the people who make up the majority of the population in the Blue Surge Mountain Range. In fact, it's us, the “Servant Disciples”! The Cultivators are always very busy cultivating, so it is our responsibility to attend to their food and drinks as well as housing, feed the Spiritual Beasts, take care of the Spiritual Plants, and sweep their palaces *etc.* The weakest “Core Disciple” would have at least 100 servants, and an “Exterior Disciple” would have a roundabout of 10.”

Wu Yu really appreciated what Uncle Sun was doing for him, because he not only took care of him, but also widened his horizons, showing him what the Celestial World, the World of Cultivators really looked like!

“Remember!” At this moment, Sun Wudao looked back at Wu Yu, stressing each word one by one “As a servant, we must know and understand that offending or displeasing a Celestial is the greatest taboo! Even if you’re an “Exterior Disciple”, you can’t, otherwise you’ll bring unto yourself death and unimaginable pain. Also, If you commit that taboo, I’ll have to suffer along with you too, because I’m your superior officer! Remember, engrave what I’ve said in your heart!”

He was born in the Royal Palace, where you had to be smart and tough to survive, so Wu Yu knew his current status; In the Sword to Heaven Sect, he was the lowest of the low, a shocking change in status and prestige compared to when he was Prince Heir in East Yue Wu.

“Don’t be disheartened, because Servant Disciples have hope too. Many of the servants here are usually infants found and brought here by Celestials, who have just enough talent for Cultivation; I was brought here by a Celestial when I was a kid too, just like them. Here, in the Sword to Heaven Sect, you can comprehend **Dao*** and cultivate, and have the chance to learn some Daoist techniques; If you’re quite talented at Cultivation, then you just have to reach the 6th Heavenly Stage of the “Mortal Body Forging Phase” before you’re 16 years old, as well as pass some tests and exams, to become a real Disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect, giving you a shot at ascending and becoming a Celestial in the future!”

As he spoke, Sun Wudao’s face became serious and heavy, probably thinking of time’s gone past; he did not seem resigned to not becoming a real Disciple.

16! 16 years old!

Wu Yu was 15, and would be 16 in two months; he still had a chance of becoming a Disciple!

“It’s a pity that I’ve been crippled!”

He clenched his fist; If he could not ascend and become a Celestial, how was he going to kill Celestials?

“Ah, I nearly forgot to mention, the Mortal Body Forging Phase I was talking about corresponds to the “10 Heavenly Stages of Martial Arts” you have in the Mortal World. The 6th Heavenly Stage, would be the 6th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts.

If Wu Yu hadn't fallen victim to Soul Severing Powder, he was certain he would've entered the 6th Heavenly Stage in a few days time!

What a pity, what a pity!

He was just like Sun Wudao, missing the chance to enter the Sect by just one step!

After they descended the mountain, Wu Yu and Sun Wudao walked through forests and crossed ridges, making it over to another mountain in no time.

“Above is your future working place, the Celestial Beast Garden. Follow me.”

“Yes!”

“The Celestial Beast Garden... does it contain Celestial Beasts?” Wu Yu thought.

As they climbed higher and higher up the mountain, he found himself getting more tired and tired, but his mood remained jolly and excited. After all, the shocks and surprises the Celestial Sect had brought him was just too enormous and numerous!

They ascended over a thousand moss covered green rock steps, and there it was, the majestic Celestial Beast Garden! But just at that moment, they were interrupted by a piercing bird cry, and a giant thing appeared right before their very eyes, rushing into the clouds!

It was an enormous snow white bird, dancing in the breeze, wings stretched out at 20 feet, embellished with black and white feathers and adorned with red dots. The bird was full of Celestial Qi, evidently able to easily tear apart tigers and panthers, predators at the top of the chain; It could not be anything other than a Celestial Crane, no doubt about it.

On top of the Celestial Crane rode a white robed girl; Wu Yu could only see her back, her black hair swaying in the breeze, waist narrow and delicate, skin as

white as snow, but even so, he knew she was going to be beautiful. She shared the sky with the Crane, dancing synchronously together, ethereal, otherworldly, just like what Wu Yu had dreamed Celestial girls looked like in Heaven.

“She gives me the feeling Hao Tian Shangxian gives me!”

She definitely was a Celestial; just any random Celestial in the Sword to Heaven Sect could give off the feeling Hao Tian gave off, showing evidence of their strength and power! And the number of Disciples in the sect that could rival this Celestial girl in view wouldn't be small.

Now, Wu Yu finally understood that Hao Tian Shangxian wasn't the ruler of the Heavens and the Earth; There were many people in this world who could crush him like a gnat!

Hao Tian, was not a true Celestial.

And at that moment, the white robed girl looked back.

She was a peerless beauty, otherworldly, without a doubt, but her expression was cold and indifferent, a pair of eyes like a pale white butterfly lost in the darkness, unable to breathe; The girl, she was like many other Cultivators, as apathetic and indifferent as the Heavens.

“Bow your head down! Quick!” Sun Wudao savagely knocked Wu Yu's head down.

“This is the Mountain Master of our Yan Li Mountain, Su Yanli Shangxian! Not only is she a “Core Disciple”, she's also the Sect Leader Sovereign's pupil, meaning that she has the highest status amongst all the Disciples, somebody we cannot directly look at!”

“Wu Yu, in the Sword to Heaven Sect, remember to bow your head down when you encounter a Shangxian!” Sun Wudao said, looking at Wu Yu with searing eyes.

“If you don't bow your head, you'll die.”

These words reverberated in his head, like a never ending echo, and he could see that Uncle Sun was really nervous, scared that Wu Yu would get in trouble, which in turn, would get him in trouble as well.

“Ah, so the world of Celestials, the world of Cultivation is even crueler!”

***Sword to Heaven Sect** – 通天劍派 is the original text, and actually means “The Sword Sect that opens a pathway to Heaven”; of course, I can’t use that in the translation, because it’s too long, so I shortened it to “Sword to Heaven Sect”, at the expense of scrapping the meaning behind the original translation. My other option was to use Pinyin, but hey, screw that! It just doesn’t seem cool in this context!

***Spiritual Qi** – Spiritual Qi roughly means Spiritual Energy, but I prefer leaving it in Pinyin, cause, **PERSONAL PREFERENCE YOLO!**

***Crow Metal** – It actually means black metal, but that doesn’t sound too unique, so I left it as Crow Metal, the direct translation from the original text.

***Dao** – It means Profound Truths, which you may be more familiar with; I chose to use this rather than that because it works in a lot more context’s, and is shorter!

Chapter 4: The Death of Wu Yu

A good chapter with an unexpected twist... Hope you guys like it!

Yan Li Mountain, Celestial Beast Gardens.

A total of 10 Celestial Cranes were raised and kept there.

Celestial Cranes were very noble and grand creatures, but quite picky eaters, refusing to eat undelicious food, and had the ability to eat and digest some Celestial Plants and Celestial Treasures, which were normally only eaten by Cultivators. They were a type of Spiritual Beast, and Spiritual Beasts were living things that have the blood of Celestial Beasts pumping in their veins.

According to legends and rumours, Celestial Beasts were stronger than Daemons or Demons, could fly in the sky, tunnel through the Earth, and move seas and rivers with their incredible strength! Dragons, Phoenixes and **Qilin's*** were examples of Celestial Beasts.

“Sun Wudao, who is this?” After noticing their arrival, a group of burly and towering servants instantly surrounded them, seemingly with bad intentions. They were all young and strong, and had been cultivating in the Sect for many years, so they looked full of energy and power as well as healthy as oxes.

“If this was the Mortal Realm, these servants could all be Generals!” Wu Yu was shocked! Just a lowly servant in a Celestial Sect could be one of the most powerful men of a Mortal Kingdom!

“His name is Wu Yu, and is reportedly brought here by the Sect Leader from outside.” Sun Wudao was the oldest here, but he did not seem to be respected.

“Sect Leader? Hahahaha! Don't joke around!” The congregation of servants burst out into laughter. A man, who seemed to be the leader of the rabble, stepped out from the crowd. “Since he was brought here by the Sect Leader, then he must be a genius amongst geniuses; let me test him to see if it is so.”

The man's name was Zhao Chuan, and was one of the leaders of the 100 servants on Yan Li Mountain. He was 30 years old this year, in his prime, and was also, reportedly, a 4th Heavenly Stage "Mortal Body Forging Phase" "**Neizhuang***" Martial Artist expert.

"Out of the question!" Sun Wudao moved his fragile body in front Wu Yu to block the thugs from him, "He was poisoned in the Mortal Realm, and has lost all his Martial Ability! Please, don't harrass him!"

Wu Yu did not expect that Sun Wudao would protect and shield him to this extent, risking making enemies out of several burly servants, even though it was their first time meeting. He remembered this favour of kindness, and will return it a thousand times over! If not for Sun, he would not've been able to avoid a round of beatings as he's a newbie.

"Ah, a cripple! But I don't care whether he's a cripple or not; If he does one less piece of work, then he'll have to exchange it with his life, because I, Zhao Chuan, do not sympathise with cripples. After all, **Su Shangxian*** gave me the task of taking care of the Celestial Beast Gardens, showing her trust in me!" Zhao Chuan said bluntly.

"Boss Zhao rest assured, if he does one less piece of work, I'll do one more!"

"You sure you can do that, with that old bony body of yours?", Zhao Chuan smiled coldly, then turned around to shout, "Brothers, today several Shangxians will come to visit Su Shangxian, so we'll have to take good care of their Celestial Cranes. If anything disastrous happens, then you'll have to exchange with your pathetic life!"

"Yes, Commander Zhao!"

Wu Yu reckoned that with such an important task at hand, Zhao Chuan and his lackeys would be too busy to give trouble to an old man and a cripple.

Sure enough, not long after Zhao Chuan exhorted his cronies the sound of wings flapping came from the sky. A few humongous Celestial Cranes descended onto the Celestial Beast Garden, and from them jumped off several young men and women.

The Celestials were quite young, around the same age as Wu Yu, and wore

grand and extravagant clothing that were even more luxurious than court apparel. The men all emanated heroism, full of energy and spirit, and the women were graceful and elegant, skin smooth and as white as snow. They were chatting joyfully without a care in the world, making people envious of the carefree lives they lead.

“If I hadn’t taken Soul Severing Powder, I could have been one of them.”,

Wu Yu stood respectfully to one side, bowing his head down low so that he would not look directly at them. If he did so, the Shangxians would definitely punish him!

“Big Sister Su, we’ve come today to learn more about Dao and Cultivation!”

Smiles plastered the faces of the few Shangxians as they proceeded towards “Yan Li Palace”, disregarding the presence of the servants around them.

After waiting for them to leave, Zhao Chuan shouted, “Service the Cranes well, service the Cranes well!”

Sun Wudao did not teach Wu Yu how to service the Cranes through speaking, but rather through direct action, showing him how to feed the Cranes properly through slow and articulate movements. As of now, Wu Yu understood most of the rules here, so he studied hard and worked diligently and quickly, so as not to give trouble to Uncle Sun.

And with the blink of an eye, it was nightfall; Su Yan Li’s lecture on Dao had finished, so Wu Yu reckoned the “Shangxian’s” were going to leave the mountain at a roundabout of now. He and Uncle Sun were currently lying on an enormous green rock, like father and son, discussing about details regarding Celestial Sects. Wu Yu now had a great understanding on Celestial Sects and Cultivation, and finally knew about what happened to Uncle Sun in the past. Suddenly an exclamation of surprise could be heard, so the two quickly turned their heads towards where the shout came from. A Celestial Crane was shitting maniacally, diarrhea splattering over the place

“That’s a guest’s Celestial Crane!”

The suddenness of the situation caught all the servants by surprise, leading to a flurry of panic. Even Zhao Chuan was flustered, so terrified that he was

shuddering uncontrollably. And it just had to be at this moment the congregation of Shangxian's descended the mountain from "Yan Li Palace", to be met with this hectic scene.

"My little Ling Er!"

A handsome teen emerged from the group, dressed in black and white brocaded apparel with a jade pendant dangling off his waist, as well as a gem studded sword strapped to his back.

"Who serviced my Celestial Crane?!!!" the handsome teen shouted angrily, his voice so deafening that Sun Wudao nearly fell off the green rock he was lying on.

In reality, the servants fed the Cranes by random, and because the Cranes looked the same, who knew who fed which one? And also, the feeder was not at fault for this, but the food! Maybe the food had expired or become stale!

"It was Wu Yu!", the pale Zhao Chuan shouted.

"Who's Wu Yu?!", the handsome teen Situ Jin asked coldly.

The servants gaze's all fell upon Wu Yu.

Wu Yu was also shocked, unsure of what happened; After all, it was his first time here, being unsure of what just happened was normal.

"You damned bastard! Die!"

Situ Jin magicked a whip out of nowhere and without a second word, rushed forward to where Wu Yu currently was, lifted the whip high and swung it fiercely and quickly, so fast and so loud that nobody had the time to cover their ears. Wu Yu did not even know what had happened, because everything was just so fast, and just like that the fabric over his chest exploded, revealing a gruesome wound, blood leaking out of the blood red line the whip left on his body. The power behind the whip sent him off his feet and into the green rock he was previously lying on, smashing so hard into it that he was already near death.

"I fed the Crane!" Sun Wudao stood out, eyes blinking and shuddering nervously.

Wu Yu heard what Uncle Sun said by the edge of his fading consciousness, and was shocked that he would go to such for him. After all, this was only their first

meeting! Today's kindness he would engrave deeply within his heart, but he did not like to get people involved with his own problems. This time, Zhao Chuan, seeing as he was a cripple, pushed him out to act as a meatshield and cannon fodder, so the matter was only between him, Zhao Chuan and Situ Jin, not Sun Wudao.

“He was not part of this!”

With strength that came from somewhere he did not know about, Wu Yu managed to stand up, and pushed Sun Wudao out of the way. This was how he did things; he would not let people suffer because of him.

And Wu Yu did not really care about whether he lived or died. Even though he had entered a Celestial Sect, he had no hope of becoming a Celestial and was fated to be ordinary and service other people for the rest of his life, living as the lowest of the low in society. Who would hope for a life like that.

“You have courage! But guess what? I hate idiots who have courage, but no ability!”, Situ Jin laughed coldly, whip rising up again to strike at Wu Yu. The whip hit him like a snake, and instantly his skin was ripped open, revealing a mess of minced flesh and blood. With a snort, Wu Yu buckled onto the ground, his chest on fire, the pain agonising.

“Sigh... this Wu Yu is a cripple, so his death will not really have a big impact. The rest of us, however, cannot die because we're in our prime, and still have the ability to service Su Shangxian!” the bunch of servants comforted themselves.

“So terrifying! Lucky that it was not my little Mei Er, or I would've die from sadness! Situ Jin has the right to be this angry, and these scum should die anyways. If we don't kill him as a warning, how would the others learn to behave?”, a female Shangxian said softly.

“Ka Cha!”

Situ Jin just wanted to kill somebody, so he struck out one last time with the whip, hitting Wu Yu in the head, instantly splitting it open.

And that was it, because darkness had, at last, took over Wu Yu's consciousness.

***Qilin** – A divine beast in Chinese Mythology; read more about it [here!](#)

***Neizhaung** – Neizuang is basically another name for the 4th Heavenly Stage of the Mortal Body Forging Phase; It means inner organs, but it wouldn't sound cool if I wrote that, so I stuck with the Pinyin.

***Su Shangxian** – Yan Li, Feng Xue Ya's pupil (in case you forgot or something).

Chapter 5: Godpearl Metal

Took quite a long time to translate but... Enjoy!

Deep night.

Sun Wudao's thin and fragile body was kneeling in front of a freshly dug grave, eyes red and puffed up after a bout of crying. Wu Yu was currently wrapped in straw mats, the bloodstains on his body meticulously scrubbed away, lying peacefully in the ditch.

“Wu Yu, even though our meeting was a chance encounter and was very brief, it was a meeting of serendipity. This is a treasure passed on to me by my Ancestors; It's over a few hundred years old already, and has turned into a useless lump of metal many years ago, but father has always insisted I pass it on. I have no wife nor child, so this “Godpearl Metal”, I gift to you, so you have one more thing to miss about this world you used to live in.”

Sun Wudao removed his red necklace and slipped it on Wu Yu's neck, the “Godpearl Metal” lying like a pendant on his chest. After that, he bowed down 3 times in front of the grave, filled it up with earth, and erected a wooden tombstone which said “Here lies the Prince Heir of East Yue Wu Wu Yu.”

The Prince Heir of East Yue Wu, his brilliance shaking the heavens.

Sun finally knew Wu Yu's identity in the Mortal Realm after their discussion on the green stone today.

“Your Uncle Sun will guard your grave for 7 days and 7 nights.”

After Su Yanli knew of the incident, she reportedly scolded Situ Jin and allowed him to bury Wu Yu, so the days passed by very idly.

It was night now, and Sun Wudao was leaning on a tree trunk, staring at the beautiful constellations in the night sky.

“Uh....”

At that very moment, the tombstone collapsed.

“What happened?” Sun wondered, because he was sure he had anchored the tombstone very deep into the ground.

Huo!

All of a sudden, an arm erupted from the earth, pale and ghostly in the moonlight, making him jump back in fright and collapsing onto the ground, face bloodless and white.

And right in front of his very eyes, the earth moved again to reveal a second arm, which proceeded to push the earth aside to reveal a hole.

A ruddy faced and flushed Wu Yu emerged from the hole, to stare at Sun with disbelieving eyes, “Uncle Sun, why did you bury me when I haven’t even died? I was nearly bored to death!”. He didn’t even know whether to laugh or to cry. But, his wounds still hadn’t healed yet, so getting out of the grave nearly pained him to death.

“You didn’t die?!!!”

Wu Yu’s appearance came as a startling revelation to Sun, who’d thought he’d died, because who could survive from those gruesome injuries? Surviving was a great miracle in and out of itself.

“Of course! Just a few whips won’t be able to take away my life!”. He felt that he’d just went to sleep.

“That’s good.” Sun stood up, revealing a rare smile.

“Come, let’s drink to celebrate your survival!”

Sun had stored away a flask of good wine for a good tens of years, and felt that it was a good fit for this joyous occasion. He had already poured out half of it onto Wu Yu’s grave earlier as an offering, so there was only half left. That was perfect, however, because they wouldn’t get drunk!

After finishing off the bottle of wine, they lay on the black earth, staring at the numerous stars in the night sky.

“Wu Yu, do you hate Situ Jin?”, Sun Wudao asked.

“Yeah, I want to kill him.”, Wu Yu replied frankly. The indifferent attitude that the “Shangxian’s” had and their disregard to mortals, viewing their lives as nothing had thoroughly incited his anger. Even Celestial Cranes were worth more than them in his eyes.

“Don’t hate; you’re not allowed to hate. Mortals cannot fight against Celestials, because that’s the universal rule. Wu Yu, answer me please!” Sun asked sternly.

Faced with this difficult question, Wu Yu didn’t know how to reply.

“They are favored by the Heavens, and were born to rule over us. We are Mortals, we are ants, we are weak. They can easily crush us to death, so you absolutely cannot hate them; The more you hate, the faster you’ll die.”

“Fine.”

Sun Wudao had taken care of him for many days whilst he was unconscious, had risked his safety by blocking the other servants from beating him, and was also willing to replace him and become a scapegoat; Wu Yu had already engraved these acts of kindness in his heart, never to be erased, so he absolutely cannot let Uncle Sun worry over him.

“Back then, I only missed out on becoming a Celestial by one step. If only I had succeeded...” Sun sighed, looking at the night sky.

This was Sun’s life’s greatest regret.

His regret was also Wu Yu’s current regret, because he knew the feeling of failing just by one step.

“Hey, where’s your “Godpearl Metal”?” Sun Wudao stared at Wu Yu’s chest, eyes wide in surprise. Wu Yu looked down and noticed that he was wearing Sun’s red necklace, but the metal had gone.

“Maybe it fell into the grave. Let’s check.”

The two searched for over an hour to no avail. The little piece of metal had just disappeared. The effort had tired out Sun, who’d collapsed on the floor, “It’s ok. It was just a piece of metal; if we lost it, then we lost it. You’re still alive, and

that's more important than anything else!"

Wu Yu was also exhausted.

With the sky as a blanket and the earth a bed, he slept sweetly.

In his dream, he saw a giant column that seemed to pierce the Heavens.

The Celestial Mist surrounded pillar charged through the clouds, its top thrusting into the sky, its bottom plugging into the endless ground, towering and domineering, radiating a brilliant golden light that shook the soul!

And engraved on it, were a few humongous words.

"Ruyi Jingu Bang*"

Each word was like a mountain that bore down on Wu Yu's head.

Shocking, too shocking!

"This pillar... what is it?" At that time, Wu Yu still didn't know he was in a dream.

Boom!

The words on the pillar started changing, breaking down and reforming into numerous smaller words that began with : "<<Indestructible Vajra Body>>! Once fully cultivated, the world is thine's apple; Thou can charge into the 8000 Heavens and break into Hell and its 10,000 layers! Bronze skull and Metal bones, a body like gold, even the weapons of Gods cannot injure thee; Heaven's tribulations, stand to a side, because whether in the Heavens or on the Earth, thy's body will be undying and everlasting!"

The whole mantra had a total of a thousand words, but no matter how hard Wu Yu tried, he could only remember the first thousand.

And that very first thousand's name was : Indestructible Vajra Body, First Stage.

"I am Heavenly Celestial Domain's **Qitian Big Saint***, Nirvana Celestial Domain's **Battle Victory Buddha***! Fated one, inherit my legacy, rebel against the heavens, and raze those who stand in your way!" Suddenly, a vast, overbearing and sharp voice roared in Wu Yu's head, causing his mind to split

apart at the seams.

“Pa!”

It terrified Wu Yu so much that he sat up; ah... so it was a dream!

The sky had already brightened, the fiery sun high up in the sky, and Sun Wudao, who was beside him, was currently roasting a rabbit, sprinkling onto it some herbs and condiments. The delicious smell permeated the air, instantly freshening Wu Yu up, and Sun, who'd notice he'd already woken up, passed him a bamboo mug of hot water with his old, gnarly hands. “It's morning. Drink!”

“I.....”

Wu Yu was still in shock over what had just happened in his dream.

The giant pillar that reached the Heavens, Ruyi Jingu Bang, Indestructible Vajra Body, and the voice from just now was just too domineering, too shocking! His mind hadn't recovered, still buzzing and shaking nonstop.

What Sun Wudao said afterwards, he couldn't hear.

“Uncle Sun, I'm going back first.”

The place where they were currently at wasn't very far away from their house; crossing a short hill would bring him back.

Wu Yu was very desperate to get back, because he found out that he still remembered the thousand words he'd seen engraved on the pillar in his dream, the instructions on cultivating a “Indestructible Vajra Body”! He remembered it clearly, word for word, never to forget!

Sun Wudao did not notice Wu Yu's wounds, because they had been covered by clothing, but if he did, he'd be really dumbfounded, because there were no wounds! All of them had healed, over a span of one night! Wu Yu felt like he'd been reborn with a new body! One thing that he could not confirm was whether the damage caused by the Soul Severing Powder had been repaired, so he was very eager to get back home, where everything was peaceful and quiet, to check.

“Ok.” Sun Wudao nodded his head.

Once back home, Wu Yu let Sun rest first, then returned to his own room to try and recite the mantra. And sure enough, he'd really remembered the incredible

and complicated mantra word for word.

“Indestructible Vajra Body First Stage can be cultivated during the Mortal Body Forging Phase, and is Heaven Celestial Domain’s strongest, and most profound technique.”

“Heaven Celestial Domain... what is that place? And who is Qitian Battle Saint, Battle Victory Buddha?” Wu Yu pondered to no avail.

He knew that the world was very big; East Yue Wu had more than ten surrounding countries such as South Mountain Zhao Kingdom! North Peak Qin Kingdom! Just where is Heaven Celestial Domain?

But he didn’t need to know right now, because he’d been reborn, had obtained a something that was life-changing!

He could feel excitement that he’d never experienced before, but, he had to confirm.

Wu Yu tried executing one of the East Yue Wu’s Royal’s techniques, and it worked! If only he didn’t want to attract attention, he’d have roared in happiness!

This meant that the damage done by the Soul Severing Powder had been healed thoroughly! Even though he’d have to start again, but he could now cultivate! Even if he wouldn’t be accepted into the Celestial Sect, he still had 100 years to work hard at cultivating!

“I, Wu Yu, who had to bite the bullet, am finally reborn!”. The bitterness in it was unmistakable. “Ruyi Jingu Bang, Godpearl Metal, this legacy should’ve all come from Uncle Sun’s little piece of metal! This is his property, so I have to share it with him, and cultivate this “Indestructible Vajra Body” together.”

And as Wu Yu was about to find Sun Wudao, his head was suddenly wracked with pain.

“Seem’s like this legacy does not want me to share it with Uncle Sun; it’s probably scared it’ll be spread out to the masses.” Wu Yu didn’t even know what to say after figuring out this truth, because the legacy was originally Sun Wudao’s, but it didn’t let him return it to him.

He told himself to calm down.

“Uncle Sun’s already over 100 years of age, very old, so I reckon that even with the help of Spiritual Medicine, he won’t be able to cultivate.”

This train of thought led Wu Yu to give up on the idea of sharing the legacy with Sun.

“But, his dream when he was young was to be accepted into the Celestial Sect, and become a disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect! If I get accepted into the Sect, then he’d be really happy! His days are numbered now, so I cannot let him down and let him regret. From today onwards, I’ll work hard to enter the Sect in one month! Yes, one month!”

On the green stone yesterday, Sun had told him that not being accepted into the Sect, just by one step, was his greatest regret.

In Wu Yu’s heart, a flame of desire was lit. He had to become a Celestial! He had to take revenge! He had to avenge his country, which his Ancestors had passed on for many millenia!

Today, Sun Wudao talked about the details of Cultivation.

“The 10 Heavenly Stages of Martial Arts, is the Mortal Body Forging Phase, abbreviated as the Body Forging Phase, in the dictionaries of Celestials.”

“The Body Forging Phase has a total of 10 stages, which are : Muscle Forging, Tendon Grinding, Bone Refining, Nei Zhuang, Blood Changing, Meridian Puncturing, Mind Condensing, Tuotai, Xianbian and Tongshen respectively. The first stage, Muscle Forging, is a stage where one has to forge, to shape, to refine their muscles, so that they can have the strength of a horse. A successful cultivation of the first stage will give your body the strength of one battlehorse!”

“The second stage, Tendon Grinding, will refine your tendons, so a successful cultivation would lead to a great increase in battle ability, giving your body the strength of 5 battlehorses!

“After that one has to refine their bones, strengthen their inner organs, change their blood, open the meridians Ren and Du, and puncture all the meridians in the body. Next, one has to condense their mind, combine it with their body, regenerate their body from the ashes, and then reach the Xianbian

stage, where one has to prepare themselves for becoming a Celestial. The last stage, Tongshen, is when one acquires the strength of the Ghost God, giving one the strength of 2000 battlehorses!”

“And at that level, one man can block over a thousand men; This is the 10th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts! People who can be called Martial Sovereign in the Mortal Realm are at this level!”

“But, in the eyes of Celestials, the Tongshen Stage is only a foundation in order to become a Celestial. Absolutely nothing.”

“The Phase after the Mortal Body Forging Phase is the Qi Condensing Celestial Roots Phase, which is abbreviated as the Qi Condensing Phase. Reportedly, it has something to do with condensing and cultivating mana, as well as planting Celestial Roots. Hao Tian Shangxian, and all the Core Disciples, such as Su Yanli, are at this phase, able to move oceans and rivers, do almost anything!

“But, the most powerful and impressive Celestials are above the Qi Condensing Phase; Sect Leader is an example of one, a **Jindan*** Celestial.

After hearing about that person, searing flames could be seen in Wu Yu’s eyes. If only he could become his disciple.....

Godpearl Metal* – This is the abbreviated name of the metal. Couldn’t be arsed to write out the full name because it’s goddamn long, and would look awkward. **** Chinese names, goddamn.

Ruyi Jingu Bang* – Sun Wukong’s stick/staff.

Qitian Big Saint, Battle Victory Buddha* – Titles given to our beloved Monkey God, Sun Wukong!

Jindan* – Jindan means Golden Pill. Usually refers to when somebody cultivates to the point in which their Dantian becomes a Golden Pill.

Chapter 6: Indestructible Vajra Body

Enjoy this Chapter!

In order to avoid trouble after his rebirth, Wu Yu had Sun Wudao spread the word that he was still alive. The servants of Yan Li Peak all exclaimed on his survivability, and the news also reached the master of the peak, Su Yanli.

Probably because Wu Yu had nearly been beaten to death by an Outer Disciple, she gave him one month to rest peacefully. And because of that, he had the chance to finally cultivate without any disturbance and reaching his dream of truly entering the Sect!

“Uncle Sun, I’m going to the Green Valley today to relax myself.” Every day, Wu Yu would depart in the early morning, sometimes waking up even earlier than Sun.

“This Wu Yu, so energetic even after encountering such a catastrophe.” Sun Wudao stared at Wu Yu, who swiftly rushed into the mountain forest and disappeared with the blink of an eye.

He didn’t really mind. As long as Wu Yu could relax himself and forget his hatred, then everything else was fine.

Right, Wu Yu had not told Sun about the legacy he’d inherited.

The first reason was because the entrance exam was one month away, just before Wu Yu’s 16th birthday. This was his only chance of being accepted into the Sect, because he would be 16 after that, disqualifying him from future entrance exams. And to be honest, he didn’t have great certainty on whether he’d pass the test; After all, he only had 1 month to cultivate from scratch, and reach the 6th Heavenly Stage of the Mortal Body Forging Phase! There was a great chance he’d fail, and he didn’t want Sun to be disappointed.

The second reason, was because he wanted to give Sun a surprise on the day

of the exam! The old man had taken care of him during his stay here, so Wu Yu wanted Sun to feel proud of himself. And that day would probably be the most important day of his life!

The blazing sun hadn't risen, yet sweat had already swamped Wu Yu's clothes.

He was currently breezing through the woods, swinging from tree to tree, branch to branch like an agile monkey to "forge" his body. No time was wasted, not even a single second, pushing himself to the maximum; his goal was hard, almost impossible to accomplish, so desperate times called for desperate measures!

"He He!"

Loud and heavy grunts echoed throughout the forest.

Using his arms and legs in conjunction, Wu Yu swiftly rushed throughout the forest, disregarding the scratches that branches and twigs were leaving on his body. If you monitored the surrounding Spiritual Qi closely, you could make out numerous little strands of gold that seemed to enter his body, fusing with his flesh and blood.

As the sun rose to its highest point, the surrounding Golden Spiritual Qi seemed to escalate in quantity. And Wu Yu's body, was toughening up every second of the day, thanks to the effect the Golden Spiritual Qi had on him.

Pa!

A slight waver in attention caused Wu Yu to fall to the ground from a two feet tall tree, covering himself in dirt and soil.

"Continue!"

This was his only chance! In order to reach that goal, he'd already suffered a lot, so he knew that accomplishing it was not going to be easy. But no matter what hardships he had to face, he'd endure!

He climbed up, and continued training.

"<<Indestructible Vajra Body>> sure is mysterious and complicated. Just the first stage could already be split apart into 10 levels, known as the 10 big techniques!"

“Thinking back, the <<East Wu Royal Technique>> I used to cultivate was a Secret Record that directly recorded how to cultivate up to the 10th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts. However, it was not split up into 10 Big Techniques which detailedly described how to cultivate each Heavenly Stage like the <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, so compared with it, my East Yue Wu’s undisputed number 1 technique is complete trash!”

Mortal Body Forging Phase, 1st Heavenly Stage, Muscle Forging.

The first technique in <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> is called <<Vajra Muscle Forging>>.

Today, Wu Yu had officially started cultivating this technique. Despite its hardness in cultivating, Wu Yu was progressing forward at immense speed. This probably had something to do with the fact that he’d had previous experience regarding how to cultivate at this Heavenly Stage.

Like what the name states, the Body Forging Phase is all about forging the body, so a lot of training and honing was required. The Heavenly Stage Wu Yu was currently at, the 1st Heavenly Stage, especially needed immense amounts of training, because it was the 1st Stage of the Body Forging Phase!

Every day, Wu Yu would sprint in the forest like a scurrying monkey, or dive deep down to the river bed and stay there to withstand its 10,000 jin pressure whilst training his punches and holding his breath at the same time.

Sometime he’d also stand under a waterfall, letting plunging water to pound on his back.

And other times he’d punch a 3 feet tall tree with his fists like crazy!

Like that, the days passed one by one!

<<Vajra Muscle Forging>> was the introduction technique to <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, so cultivating it was incredibly exhausting and hard. Normal people just wouldn’t be able to endure the pain it induced, but luckily Wu Yu was no ordinary Joe; his ability to withstand pain was beyond imagination.

To motivate himself to endure, Wu Yu would think of the moment he’d be accepted into the Celestial Sect, completing his and Sun’s dream, as well as the hatred he had at Hao Tian Shangxian, what he’d done to him, his evil face...

“There’s not a lot of time left.... Rush!”

“The Heavens blessed me with Vajra, which will forge my flesh and blood!”

It was noon, and Wu Yu, who’d sprinted to the mountain peak, was punching the mountain rock under the blazing sun, fist after fist, sweat trickling down his body in rivulets.

“The so called Vajra requires a lot of tempering to cultivate successfully!”

“I do not have a lot of time left, so I’ve got to work harder than other people by at least 10 times! If other people punch 1 time, I’ll punch 10 times!

Pa Pa Pa Pa!

The giant rock on the mountain peak was shaking continuously, day after day, and before long, cracks started to appear. Wu Yu’s hands and feet had already been beaten out of shape long ago, but in the destroyed flesh, new and tougher flesh was born!

In his flesh and blood, prominent little threads of Golden Spiritual Qi could be seen traveling around, especially in the blazing sun.

Not only his fists, but his whole body was covered with scratches and wounds.

The wounds stung and hurt like hell, but to Wu Yu, who’d entered a training craze, they were endurable. The wounds hurt especially painfully when he dove into the riverbed to train, but he’d clench his teeth and withstand it. After all, success always comes at the price of immense suffering!

“If I don’t hone and train my determination and will, how will I become a Martial Sovereign? If I don’t become a Martial Sovereign, then I won’t even have the right of thinking of becoming a Celestial!”

“I have to become a Celestial! I have to come back from the ashes!”

The high intensity training that Wu Yu had to go through brought him incredible levels of hunger, so he’d eat up numerous wild beasts in the mountains every day, as well as some Treasures he’d find in the Mountain Range which are, very unfortunately, quite rare.

All the real Treasures in the Blue Surge Mountain Range all belong to the Sword to Heaven Sect, so if I become a Sword to Heaven Sect disciple, then I’d

have the qualifications to savour those Treasures. At that time, I'm sure my progress will become even quicker.

This was also Wu Yu's motivation to succeed, because he knew that the world had countless more strange and mysterious Treasures out there which were unimaginable to him at his current level.

“Boom!”

5 days later, the huge rock finally exploded into pieces.

“Break!”

An angry roar with a hint of transcendence that shook the Heavens bursted from Wu Yu's chest!

Under the fiery sun, like its fire had blazed to his skin, rich Spiritual Qi started to rush around energetically, entering his body through his wounds to forge his muscles, and at that moment, Wu Yu completed his transcendence to enter the 1st Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase!

Within his body, strands of Golden Spiritual Qi started to aggregate, moving towards one direction to agglomerate, finally landing on his back to form a fist sized “卐”.

A golden word!

Power!

The feeling of power had finally returned to his body!

“<<Vajra Muscle Forging>>, finally completed!”

Wu Yu stood on the mountain peak, shirtless, wearing black trousers. He looked quite skinny and lanky, but his muscles were all prominent and toned, flexible yet tough. If one noticed closely, little golden flashes of light could be seen circulating, to agglomerate in the “卐” in his back.

“Roar!”

Once again, Wu Yu let out an angry roar to the world,

He, Wu Yu, had finally come back!

He'd returned to the 1st Heavenly Stage, but the feeling was totally different

to the first time he'd reached the 1st Heavenly Stage.

“I now have strength to rival 3 battlehorses, which is three times the power of a normal 1st Heavenly Stage Body Forging Phase Martial Artist! Also, I have gained two incredible and unexpected abilities!”

“<<Vajra Muscles Forging>> has already made my body very tough and resilient, and it is just the 1st technique. So if I actually finish cultivating <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, wouldn't that mean that I'd actually have a Bronze Skull and Steel Bones, and be immune to ordinary swords and lances etc.?”

This ability was the one Wu Yu was most excited and hopeful about, because even the bodies of Celestials were still flesh and bone. If his was made out of metal, then wouldn't that mean nobody would be his opponent?

“Also, my regenerative speed has now also surpassed those of normal people; the wounds I'd gained from the past few days have already healed, without the help of any herbs or medicines. If I cultivate <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> to the end, will I truly become undying and everlasting, able to regenerate just from a drop of blood?”

Several times the strength and power, several times the toughness and resilience, several times the regenerative speed!

Even though it was only the 1st Heavenly Stage, the power within Wu Yu was already beyond all imagination.

“The second technique, <<Vajra Tendons>>, will also make my tendons as hard as Vajra, if I'm to believe!”

Wu Yu had a feeling that the complexity and mysteriousness of <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> he'd seen so far was only the tip of the iceberg!

Ignoring his need for rest, he started the cultivation of <<Vajra Tendons>>.

The 2nd Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, Tendon Grinding.

Tendon Grinding was a little bit different to Muscle Forging, because the emphasis was on the toughening of tendons, therefore the cultivation methods was different, and was also more painful. But, Wu Yu already had experience

regarding how to reach this stage, and because his heart was now tougher, and also because he now had a more profound technique to cultivate, progress was immense even with the lack of time.

After a few days, Wu Yu reached completion once again. The tendons in his body were now even stronger and tougher than his muscles, like metal rope, but what was most scary about it wasn't its hardness, but its flexibility!

Tendons were also one of the bases of strength and power, so upon reaching the 2nd Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, Wu Yu now currently had strength to rival 10 battlehorses!

"I've just reached the 2nd Heavenly Stage, but my current power is now already 1/5th of the power I had previously!"

Wu Yu finally realized how scarily profound and superb <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> was, and knew that he'd acquired a true Treasure.

Under the smoldering sun, not only did he have tempered, toned and powerful muscles, he also had golden tendons that seemed to spread over every part of his body. However, this was only the start of his road of cultivation!

"The third technique, <<Golden Flame Bones>>!"

"To reach this stage, one must cultivate until his bones become like gold, and purify them until flames form!"

Only when one cultivates out golden bones, the supporting structure of the body, fuses it with one's flesh and agglomerates Spiritual Qi until the point golden flames burst into being within one's bones, is the 3rd Stage complete.

The 1st Stage of the <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, its 1st 1000 words, can be considered the forging of the body, and consolidating its foundations.

From the flesh, to the tendons, and finally the bones!

What was in store for him later, Wu Yu did not think of too much. But, what he knew for sure was if he could cultivate to the 10th Heavenly Stage and become a Martial Sovereign, then he'd not fear Hao Tian Shangxian if they had come to blows!

To reach the 2nd Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, Wu Yu used a

total of 11 days.

After a moment of calculation, Wu Yu determined that there was only 21 days left until the entrance exam to become a disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect. Before, Wu Yu did not hold too much hope, but now, after fully understanding the “scariness” of <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, he thought maybe he actually had chance!

“Normally, being at the 6th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Stage would grant one the strength of 100 battlehorses. If I had the strength of 100 battlehorses, then other people would think that I’ve reached the 6th Heavenly Stage, thus giving me the qualifications to participate in the entrance exam!”

If Wu Yu kept on cultivating <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, then the increase of power between each stage would increase. Also, for exam day day, he relearnt some of the Martial Techniques he had executed before, before digesting the Soul Severing Powder.

According to legends, Celestials could learn and use Daoist Arts, which was incredible, but no matter how strong a Mortal was, he/she still cannot learn or use Daoist Arts, as she is not a Celestial!

Except for Daoist Arts, the Mortal Realm had Martial Arts, which was basically the only level of techniques that Mortals could execute, so the techniques all the Body Forging Phase disciples within the Sect are using are basically all Martial Arts.

Martial Arts is split into a total of 3 classes, which are Low Class, Middle Class and High Class respectively. But only when Wu Yu had come here (entered the sect) did he know that in fact it was actually split into 4 classes, with the final one, and the best one known as Best Class.

With the resources he had back then in East Yue Wu, Wu Yu had learnt quite a lot of different Martial Arts, with the Secret Record which was only permitted to be cultivated by Royals as the strongest! Even though it was only a Middle Class Martial Art, its fame was still very big and wide spread, known by the citizens of many kingdoms in the Mortal World as <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>>!

According to rumors, the Martial Art was created by a very Ancient Martial

Sovereign, who had realized it upon slaying a giant whale in the East Sea with his sword. Because East Yue Wu was near the East Sea, they had acquired that Martial Sovereign's legacy, which was that Martial Art.

But, at Wu Yu's current level, he could not execute the technique's true might out, so he learnt a Low Class Art Martial Art known as <<Tiger Roaring Dragon Fist>>!

Even though it was a Low Class Martial Art, it was the most lethal fisting technique in that class, and reportedly had might of tigers and dragons imbued within it.

Once before, Wu Yu, with the help of <<**Monkey Ghost Steps**>>*, charged forward into enemy ranks of over ten thousand soldiers by the lonesome, chopping off the enemy General's head with the <<Slaying Whales by the East Sea Sword Technique>> to the cheers of his country's citizens.

The Martial Arts he was once proficient in was relearnt and cultivated successfully, thus adding greatly to his current progress. He could feel his battle ability surge!

Wu Yu kept on practicing the Martial Arts he had relearnt until deep night.

"Pu Pu Pu!"

A towering tree, under the continuous impact of his <<Tiger Roaring Dragon Fists>> started to crack, fissures spreading out from the center of the trunk. Before long, the tree, unable to support its weight, collapsed on to the ground with a mighty thunk.

"Pa Pa!"

At that moment, clapping sounds could be heard from the surroundings.

"Shit, I was too focused on cultivating that I didn't notice my surroundings!"

Startled, Wu Yu quickly scanned around his immediate vicinity to see 6 burly figures leap out the darkness, heading out from the forest to surround him, laughing savagely.

<<**Monkey Ghost Steps**>>* – A footwork technique. I hate it when authors just

simply write down the name of the technique without prior explanations and introductions.

Chapter 7: A Night of Murder

Chapter 7! Merry Christmas people!

“Boss Zhao! This Wu Yu was clearly a cripple a few days ago, yet now he can break a tree into shards with his bare hands, with raw power. He must have obtained an unbelievable piece of good fortune on our Yan Li Mountain to enact such a miracle!” A creepy servant with a large mole at the edge of his mouth said to Zhao Chuan.

“Yes, I think so too!” replied Zhao, glints of happiness and excitement visible in his pair of eyes. With that, the group of servants moved towards Wu Yu and surrounded him.

“What do you want.” Wu Yu squinted his eyes, looking at them, especially Zhao Chuan. He had not forgotten what the events that had happened tens of days ago. It was Zhao Chuan who had made him a scapegoat, leading him to nearly lose his life!

“We’re just very curious. Weren’t you crippled? Why do you have such strength and power now? Did you sneak into our living area and steal some of our Cultivation Techniques?”

Zhao Chuan sure was a petty little man, blatantly lying like that. Wu Yu knew they’d noticed the significant change within him, and were very curious to what had changed him so. And if it was something that could benefit them, they wouldn’t hesitate to snatch it from him.

“Wu Yu, you shameless thief! If you know better, then return what you’ve stolen back to us. I won’t dispute with you over what you’ve done.” Zhao Chuan’s eyes seared with greed. He had been in the Celestial Sect for a long time, but had no hope of becoming a Celestial. If there was an opportunity for him to become stronger, he wouldn’t hesitate, and wouldn’t mind dying to obtain it.

“First, I didn’t steal anything from you. Second, I do not have anything to give

you.” Wu Yu knew that Zhao Chuan was a 4th Heavenly Stage expert, above himself by two stages. This meant Zhao Chuan’s strength was two times that of his, rivaling the power of 20 battlehorses.

“Boss Zhao, just kill him once and for all!” A servant by the side said.

“Don’t tell me what to do! I’ll give you a chance to render meritorious service; go and kill him!” Zhao Chuan whacked the servant on the head. To tell the truth, he didn’t have much patience, because only when the piece of good fortune that Wu Yu had obtained fell into his hands would he feel reassured.

“Thank you Boss Zhao!” The burly servant charged at Wu Yu swiftly and fiercely, bursting with roiling power. It was evident that he had the strength of a few battlehorses, which was enough to beat a tree into shards!

“Heng!”

Even though the servant had power, his attack was full of flaws that could be exploited. Without wasting anytime, Wu Yu rushed forward, muscles bursting with immeasurable strength, and gave the servant a flying kick to the chest. The impact was so powerful that with a crack, the servant’s ribs caved in, and was sent flying away with a painful shriek, half dead.

“Strong!” Zhao Chuan hurried over to inspect the servant’s injuries.

“Just what did he acquire to become so powerful?”

As he pondered, the remaining four lackeys grouped up to attack Wu Yu. Even though they were at different stages, Wu Yu had cultivated <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, so enduring their punches were no problem. However, if the servants were hit by him, they would all be forced backwards, spitting blood along the way, arms or legs broken, to never stand up again without half a year’s rest.

“Your turn!”

A few blinks of the eye later, there was only Zhao Chuan left within the vision of Wu Yu’s searing eyes. His lackeys were now all on the floor, writhing and screaming in pain.

Taking revenge.... Ahhhhhh! What a great feeling!

Since the Heavens have given him a chance at rebirth, why shouldn't he take revenge against those who had wronged him in the past? This Zhao Chuan not only nearly got him killed, but was also trying to steal the legacy he'd acquired, so why should he give in and back down?

Cold sweat trickled down Zhao Chuan's face. He was not afraid that he wasn't Wu Yu's opponent; it was just that Wu Yu's way of fighting was too violent and brutal.

"<<Tiger Roaring Dragon Fist>>!"

Wu Yu punched out and rushed forward three steps, each step drawing strength from the ground. And on the third step, he gave off the impression of a mighty tiger, bursting with strength, releasing a ferocious howl that shook Zhao Chuan's eardrums.

With a blink of an eye, the punch had reached Zhao Chuan's face. But, Zhao Chuan was not a **lamp nearly out of oil***, magicking a sword out of nowhere and thrusting it out towards Wu Yu.

"You think that I, the main keeper of the Celestial Beast Gardens, am weak?"

Zhao Chuan already had multiple ways of killing Wu Yu in his heart.

"Slay him!" The congregation of servants shouted with hatred in their hearts.

"Wu Yu, you have wounded your own colleagues with violent measures, and for that, you are punishable with death! Today, I will substitute Su Shangxian to take your life." Zhao Chuan said coldly, the metal sword in his hand shining cruelly in the night, making Wu Yu feel chilled to the bone.

Zhao Chuan was at the 4th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase "Neizhuang", so his inner organs had already been toughened, muscles already been refined. Each breath of his was long, relaxed, and released a sound like the roaring of tigers and leopards. He was the king of the forest, a mighty tiger, his pair of cold eyes fixed on his prey, his metal sword his sharp teeth.

"Powerful." If he had his previous Martial Ability, then defeating Zhao Chuan wouldn't be hard, but right now, Zhao Chuan had twice his strength, at 20 battlehorses!

“The idiot is Sun Wudao’s lackey, so it is possible that Sun Wudao knows what he has obtained. Boss Zhao, once you’ve killed him today, let’s throw Sun Wudao off the Black Intestinal Cliff tomorrow to shatter his bones and feed the crows!”

“I definitely did not expect that the cripple would have a chance at a comeback, but encountering Boss Zhao is his greatest misfortune! Boss Zhao, don’t kill him too quickly, because we want to make wish he were dead for this humiliation!”

Wu Yu silently remembered those words. He realised that he couldn’t just punish these people for their foolish actions; he had to kill them!

Ding Ding!

Zhao Chuan’s metal longsword quaked in the darkness, eager for fresh blood!

“Zhao Chaun’s ultimate technique should be the Middle Class Technique <<Raging Rain Pear Flower Sword>> which can only be cultivated by Apex Servant Disciples. Middle Class Techniques in my East Yue Wu can be a national treasure, but in the Sword to Heaven Sect, it is only trash that they give to servants to cultivate.

“Zhao Chuan’s strength is two times mine, and he also has a Middle Class Technique!”

Wu Yu had not expected to encounter him, so the battle that was going to take place was going to be incredibly dangerous. Maybe only fighting with the intention to die would give him a chance to leave this alive.

“Die!”

At that instant, Zhao Chuan flashed over, swinging his sword without another word. Sword Shadows filled the air, emitting pure killing intent.

“Very ruthless!”

Zhao Chuan’s sword was aimed at Wu Yu’s forehead.

“Dodge!”

Wu Yu had nothing in his hands to counter the sword, so the only option available for him was to dodge. Executing <<Monkey Ghost Steps>>, he swiftly retreated. In the forest, <<Monkey Ghost Steps>>, surprisingly, had a greater

effect, allowing Wu Yu to dodge Zhao Chuan's sword by a hair in numerous occasions.

"Sure enough, this cripple does not have much ability or skill. He only knows how to dodge!" Zhao Chuan swore under his breath. "When one acts like a yes-toadie for too long, all his courage just deserts him."

Shua Shua!

The branches of the trees surrounding them were cut down by Zhao Chuan's sharp blade, flying around in the breeze, leaves scattering all over the ground. The incisions on the branches were all flat and smooth, evidence of his skill with the sword.

"<<Pear Flowers Dancing>>!"

Zhao Chuan chased Wu Yu relentlessly, sword shadows turning into pear flowers, striking at him wave after wave. With sword shadows filling his vision, Wu Yu utilised <<Monkey Ghost Steps>> to the maximum, but still many of the swords nearly found its point, so there was nothing he could do but dodge and let Zhao Chuan chase and attack him. Counterattack was close to impossible, otherwise his arm would get chopped off by Zhao Chuan!

"Heng!"

Zhao Chuan, who was not hurried at all, suddenly lunged forward to slash at Wu Yu's legs, so deep that bones could be seen.

If one noticed closely, one would see that Wu Yu's bones had golden light flowing around, close to actually becoming real gold; what he still needed was his bones to form golden flames, and then <<Golden Flame Bones>> would be complete!

"Good, this Wu Yu is good as dead now! HAHAAHA!" Zhao Chuan smiled within his heart.

"Die!"

Zhao Chuan pressed forward with his sword, utilising <<Raging Rain Pear Flower Sword>> to the maximum such that his sword was like rain falling from the sky, enveloping Wu Yu's head, giving him no time for a reprieve. After 30

minutes of battle, Wu Yu's body featured several more wounds, blood leaking out from them to dye his black clothing red, inciting Zhao Chuan to laugh savagely.

But from start to now, Wu Yu had not given any indication he was in pain, as if the person who was wounded wasn't himself.

To be honest, Zhao Chuan had not expected his battle with Wu Yu would last over 30 minutes, so he was quite surprised by Wu Yu's tenacity.

"I must finish him off now." With that, Zhao Chuan increased his pressure on Wu Yu, his sword strokes increasing in speed and power, nearly taking Wu Yu's life again in between their exchanges.

What he didn't notice, however, was that Wu Yu's eyes flashed with golden light.

"<<One Sword Through the Heart>>!"

Zhao Chuan burst forward, sword steady in his hand, lunging like a snake to find for chinks in Wu Yu's armour. Finding one, he suddenly struck at Wu Yu's chest with perfect control.

But at that moment, Wu Yu's eyes flashed with a golden light, so bright that Zhao Chuan had to squint his eyes, and in the nick of time, he gave an angry roar and did something very unexpected.

With his left hand, he grabbed hold of Zhao Chuan's sword, blocking his thrust.

This left a deep cut on his palm, nearly cutting his hand off, but sadly it was unable to cut through his bones, even though it had cut through his flesh and a portion of his tendons.

After a night of battle, a golden flame formed on his bones deep within his flesh.

"<<Azure Dragon Comes Out of the Sea>>!"

The moment he held onto Zhao Chuan's sword, he knew that he only had one more chance to attack him. If Zhao Chuan did not die this time, then he would!

Wu Yu emitted a thundering roar like the roar of dragons, shaking the endless oceans!

Huo!

Grasping hold of this opportunity, Wu Yu clenched his right hand into a fist, and executed the 2nd Move of <<Tiger Roaring Dragon Fist>>, condensing his whole body's energy onto one point. The accumulation of energy over the last 30 minutes erupted, his right hand turning into an angry Azure Dragon, smashing hard into Zhao Chuan's face. With a crack, Zhao Chuan widened his eyes, loosened his grip on his sword, and collapsed onto the floor.

One hit K.O.!

“He He.....” Wu Yu panted.

He was not a pretty sight after the battle. His left hand had nearly been cut off, wounds covered his body, and Zhao Chuan's sword was still in his hands, blood dripping off the blade.

“Very soon, golden flames will form on my bones, and I'll reach the 3rd Heavenly Stage!”

Today's thrilling battle had given him much honing, and coupled with his previous experience as well as Zhao Chuan's “assistance”, reaching the 3rd Heavenly Stage wasn't all that hard. This was also the reason why he was able to slay Zhao Chuan in the end.

He didn't want to kill anybody today, but Zhao Chuan did not give him any other choice. In the Sword to Heaven Sect, servants were not allowed to kill each other, otherwise they'd suffer severe punishments.

Everything had happened in a moment's time. Before, Zhao Chuan was the one who had the upper hand, but suddenly, Wu Yu risked his hand to block his sword and counterattack, slaying him with a punch to the head.

“Boss Zhao...”

All the servants were shocked by the end result, faces pale and colourless, staring at Wu Yu with looks of disbelief. Zhao Chuan, their idol and respected big boss, had died at the hands of Wu Yu the cripple!

“Wu... Wu Yu! You're finished! You killed Boss Zhao which is against Sect Rules, and that is punishable by death!” A servant stuttered. What he didn't know,

however, was that his word had given him a death sentence.

“Were you the one who said that after killing me today, you’ll throw Uncle Sun off the Black Intestinal Cliff to feed the crows?” Wu Yu grasped hold off the sword, walking towards him.

“I... I...” The servant, upon seeing the hatred and anger within Wu Yu’s eyes, shuddered and trembled. “No... I didn’t say that!”

Shua!

Wu Yu struck the servants down one by one with the sword.

As long as there were humans on the Earth, killing and murder would always occur.

However, Wu Yu would not kill just for fun. He would only kill 2 types of people.

The first type was evil people, like the Snake Daemon from before.

The second type was his enemies, like Hao Tian Shangxian.

If you were kind to your enemies, then you’d only bring upon yourself greater danger and trouble. The servants from just now were testaments to that.

After finishing them all off, Wu Yu looked at the blood carpeted ground.

“The world is savage and cruel, so one needs the strength to protect himself to live with dignity. The truth “the strong devours the weak” has been present the beginning of time and is still in force, applicable whether you are human or beast.

If he left, nobody would know that it was him who killed all the people here.

“Qitian Big Saint, Battle Victory Buddha, thankyou giving me the opportunity of rebirth!”

In the darkness, Wu Yu buried the metal sword into the ground. Once he became stronger, he would come back and get it so he could execute the domineering <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>>.

After reaching the 3rd Heavenly Stage, he noticed his regenerative abilities have increased once again. Even without the aid of medical plants, the wounds

that covered his body would heal within a few days.

“Today was a blessing in disguise, because I have reached the 3rd Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, although I still have to consolidate once I get back!”

Because there were too many bloodstains on his body, Wu Yu spent half a day patching and cleaning himself up before returning home. It was already deep night, and the sounds of insects chirping echoed around his surroundings. Wu Yu was standing in front of Sun Wudao’s room’s window, and through the thin satin curtains, he could see that Sun was sleeping like a log.

“I hope that from now on, he can enjoy his last years.”

“If I could get into the Celestial Sect, I’m sure that’d be the most joyous thing to happen in his life! This time, I cannot betray his expectations.” Wu Yu clenched his fist tightly.

It was very late, so the exhausted Wu Yu returned to his room to sleep.

What he didn’t notice was that a girl in a white dress had followed him for half a day, present during his fight with Zhao Chuan and the servants.

But, she was a Shangxian, Su Yanli the master of the mountain, so how was he supposed to know she was there?

lamp nearly out of oil* – A Chinese saying meaning that someone is not weak.

Chapter 8: To Heaven Palace

Ahhh so tired... Enjoy! P.S. Probs no new chapter tomorrow, maybe on Thursday or Friday.

“Wu Yu!” Sun Wudao hurried over.

It was dawn, and Wu Yu was about to leave the house to fully finish cultivating “Golden Flame Bones”

“What?”

“I’ve just heard that Zhao Chuan and some of his lackeys were killed here on Yan Li Mountain last night! Right now the whole mountain is in an uproar! Reportedly some daemons and demons from the outside have entered the Blue Surge Mountains to take revenge on the Celestials! All the servants are scared shitless!”

“Oh. Ok.”

“Sigh... the world has fallen into chaos.” Sun Wudao stared sternly at Wu Yu “These few days have been very chaotic, so don’t go outside to stroll around. The time left for you to rest and nurse your wounds isn’t long, so go back to your room and rest.”

Sun was definitely very good to himself; if it wasn’t for him, Wu Yu wouldn’t have been able to make a comeback.

“I still want to go outside to walk around. Don’t worry, because I won’t be gone far, just near the back of the mountain.” Wu Yu insisted. In fact, there were many times he had wanted to tell Sun Wudao the truth behind what really happened yesterday night, but after thinking thoroughly about it, he decided not on telling, because he wanted Sun to be shocked during the entrance exam, to feel proud of him under the eyes of thousands.

Before long, he had arrived at the back of the mountain. Through the tree

canopies of the forest, the sun could be seen rising in the east.

Even if one hovered in the sky, looking down at the vast expanse of the mist and cloud covered Blue Surge Mountain Range, one would not be able to find its end.

Celestial Mist permeated the air, showing the seven colours of the rainbow under the rays of sunlight.

Countless Celestial Cranes danced in the sky, and numerous exotic Beasts charged excitedly around the forest.

Swords filled the troposphere, light reflected off their blades in the sunlight, capering in the hands of Celestials, turning into flowers or turning into thousands of different Beasts.

In the place where the blazing sun hit hardest, Wu Yu was bareback, cultivating to forge his bones golden. His long hair was tied into a long ponytail, handsome face shining with golden light.

After cultivating the 1st Heavenly Stage, his flesh and blood was reborn, new skin white and smooth, emitting a golden light that seemed to flow and surge around his body. The air he gave off was changed too, giving off the impression of a bright, radiant handsome youngster.

There was this natural chutzpah in his eyes as well that was very eye-catching, an after-effect of reaching the 1st Heavenly Stage.

The “卐” on his back was even more prominent, agglomerating the sunlight into one big ray and guiding it into his body.

Vajra muscles, a network of golden tendons, and bones crackling with golden flames...

Wu Yu was now finally in the Introduction stage of <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>!

His cultivation of <<Golden Flame Bones>> had now finished, and his battle ability had risen drastically once again!

“I’ve just reached the 3rd Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, yet I now have the strength of over 50 battlehorses, which is comparable to that of 5th

Heavenly Stage Martial Artist. The current me can now rival the me from back before I had ingested Soul Severing Powder in terms of battle ability! Wait, no, I think I'm even stronger than back then!"

Under the blazing sun, Wu Yu could not help but smile.

Only a total of ten days had passed, yet he'd already reached this stage!

Even though previous experience had a major part to play, one cannot deny that <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> was very overpowered. Wu Yu deeply understood that he had obtained an unbelievable legacy.

"Legacies, Inheritances would definitely be very coveted in the Celestial Sect; it looks like except for the entrance exam, I have to remain low key to avoid attracting unwanted attention."

"I just don't know whether I can rival Jindan Celestials if I cultivate it to its deepest stages..."

Wu Yu's dream had changed from slowly bring peace and stability to the world, fighting battles for his country to flying on a Celestial Sword, living a carefree and unrestrained life.

In the remaining 10 days, he planned on cultivating and trying to reach the next stage, because he would not be qualified for the entrance exam with his current battle ability.

"Even though I have obtained a Legacy, entering the Celestial Sect is still very important, because it can provide me with cultivation resources and allow me to expand my connections." Wu Yu was the Prince Heir of a kingdom, so he understood these principles.

The 4th Big Technique of <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> was cultivated in order to reach the 4th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phases "Neizhuang".

Neizhuang meant to toughen and strengthen the inner organs of the body; the inner organs were the foundations of Qi and blood, the central pillar supporting the body, quite important, so after reaching the 4th Heavenly Stage, the Qi and blood within the body would be much stronger and richer.

In the Mortal Realm, one could become a Martial Expert after reaching

“Neizhuang”, exemplifying the difference in battle ability between the 3rd and the 4th stage.

The name of the 4th Big Technique was: <<Five Organs Five Gods>>

“Implant 5 Golden God seeds into the 5 organs, which are: Red Gold God, Purple Gold God, Yellow Gold God, Platinum God and Black Gold God respectively.”

“A total of five steps!”

As the name stated, once one finishes cultivating <<Five Organs Five Gods>>, one’s five organs will feel like a God is residing in each, creating Qi and blood non-stop. Their bodies would also become as big as the world, inner organs as tough as wild Beasts, to the point where it’s tougher than one’s bones.

To start with, one had to inhale and exhale air according to the breathing method recorded within the technique. Wu Yu followed the instructions, and to his surprise, what he breathed in was not normal air, but a type of gas that was as sharp as a knife and as searing as a fire. It ravaged around his body, shredding his inner organs, unbearably painful.

“There’s only one chance left for me to enter the Celestial Sect!”

The technique was so hard to cultivate that Wu Yu had the notion of giving up, but his determination to enter the Sect was unwaverable, so even if his heart was stabbed, rendered to shreds over and over again, he would endure, he would withstand.

Wu Yu’s toughness was very horrifying.

However, <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> was a technique that required a whole lot of tempering and pain to succeed in cultivating anyways.

Although the “golden knives” within his body only lasted for a short 10 days, his organs were shredded more than a billion times. But with each shredding, they would regenerate, tougher than before. Therefore, his current organs have become golden, shining brightly, tougher than the organs of a giant whale! They were so strong that one exhalation of his could shatter a tree!

Only when one’s inner organs are strong could one be considered truly strong.

Each and every breath of Wu Yu's were like the angry roars of a tiger, like the rumblings of thunder, such that one would believe the sounds were released by an Ancient Giant Beast, not a human with a meager frame. The "卍" on his back was getting brighter and brighter...

Weng!

Wu Yu exhaled, forming a wind that caused the trees in the forest to quake, scattering leaves all over the place.

"<<Five Organs Five Gods>>, complete! I have reached the 4th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase!"

After success, he did not feel strength, but hunger. Extreme hunger.

"Eat!"

Sprinting around in the forest, Wu Yu easily killed a 2000 jin wild boar, used fire to roast it, and ate it for over half a day. To one's surprise, he actually finished it, and looking at the bones that remained after the meal, what he'd done finally hit him. Why had his appetite increased so much?

"Cultivators need huge replenishment every day, and because I don't have any cultivation resources right now, I can only use Mortal "Materials" to replenish my energy stores. Reportedly, some Celestial Plants and Celestial Medicines, once eaten, can allow one to not eat for half a month without any side effects.

I have finally succeeded!

The depression that he was under had finally been lifted today. After his heart and body had become stronger, he smiled more often, giving people the impression the spring breeze was blowing against their faces.

The impression he gave off could not be compared to those of the Servant Disciples; if he did not wear the servant uniform, people would mistake him for an Outer Disciple.

"Wow, I did not expect to have the strength of 130 battlehorses at the 4th Heavenly Stage. Even Martial Experts at the 6th Heavenly Stage don't have such power. The more strength my body has, the tougher my body is; it seems like normal blades cannot pierce through my skin now." Wu Yu smiled joyously.

Wu Yu now had 100% confidence that the entrance exam was going to be a walk in the park.

There were 3 more days left until the exam, and Wu Yu was not planning to spend them cultivating. Sun Wudao would worry over him every time he left the house this month, so he felt no need to let him keep on worrying over him since he'd succeeded on reaching the 4th Heavenly Stage.

Wu Yu went back to the site where he'd killed Zhao Chuan, dug up Zhao's sword, and brought it back to his quarters, in preparation for the battles to come 3 days later.

Everything was ready.

"You've finally thought it through! Tomorrow, come with me to the Celestial Beast Gardens and help out with the work needed to be done there."

Sun Wudao was old, so his vision was getting blurrier and blurrier, therefore he did not notice the drastic change that had happened within Wu Yu, such as how he now walked like a tiger stalking its prey.

"Servants should honestly do as they're told if they want to live peacefully and well. Zhao Chuan just did not follow that rule, so he lost his little life." Sun Wudao lamented about Zhao's death, to act as a negative example to Wu Yu.

"The entrance exam is three days away, do you want to go see it?" Wu Yu asked during dinner.

"Definitely!" It was Sun Wudao's most important date, going everytime it was hosted because it was his previous dream. Even if he could not enter the Celestial Sect, just seeing the lucky ones that did would make him feel happy.

"Ok." Wu Yu finally stopped worrying that Sun wouldn't go.

What Wu Yu did not know, however, was that at this time Su Yanli had arrived at the core of the Blue Surge Mountain Range!

The main mountain of the range, "To Heaven Mountain"!

Reportedly, this was not the original name of the mountain. After the Sword to Heaven Sect had discovered the place and set up shop there, they named the mountain "To Heaven Mountain" because its peak thrust into the skies, like it

was reaching into the Heavens.

On top of the mountain, in the middle of the swirling rainbow Celestial Mists, the outline of a enormous Celestial Palace could be seen. That was the “To Heaven Celestial Palace”, where the Sect Leader conducted his business and cultivated.

Numerous dangers surrounded the Palace; Giant Beasts danced in the sky, as did blades that shined cruelly. Lightning also snaked around, ready to strike down any invaders entering the Palace without permission. It was the Sect Leader’s quarters, and his only, so without his permission, even a Protector Elder could not enter.

As of now, Su Yanli was in front of “To Heaven Celestial Palace”.

“Master, Yanli requests an audience with Master!” Su Yanli’s crisp voice sounded.

Her gown fluttered around in the Celestial Mist, so ethereal that she really was like a Celestial Girl from the Heavens.

Immediately after she spoke, the lightning that snaked around the Palace disappeared, and a path appeared through the mist and clouds to the Palace.

With the blink of an eye, she had entered the Palace.

In the hall.

The walls around her hanged 81 swords that shined with runes.

They were the weapons of a Cultivator.

Ding Ding Ding.

The swords, like trapped Beasts, struggled to get free of their confinements, an energy wall, to no avail.

“I have observed Wu Yu for over half a month since he’d slayed Zhao Chuan. This is the information I have been able to gather.”

Su Yanli respectfully bowed her head.

The Sect Leader Feng Xue Ya was standing on a podium, surrounded by a deep abyss, trapped in a reverie of the first time he met Wu Yu.

“Master, how do I handle this situation; should I snatch the legacy he received? Like the old saying, **people don’t have sin until they hide a jade***. You taught me that Cultivation is the Dao of plundering”

Feng Xue Ya looked back, face stern and angry, scaring Su Yanli so bad she retreated three steps.

“Yanli, my, Feng Xue Ya’s Dao, is the number one Dao of the Blue Surge Mountain Range. You have my legacy, which is the best legacy here, so why do you have to covet the legacy of a servant? Cultivate my Dao, and Master can guarantee that one day you will reach the Jindan Phase, reach my heights!”

Su Yanli finally understood.

She respectfully bowed her head, eyes glinting, obviously pondering over something, until the Sect Leader shouted, instantly bringing her out of her trance.

“From now on, Yanli will only focus on cultivating Master’s To Heaven Sword Dao!”

“Very good! My disciples have to be like me, to have the aspiration to look down upon the world! Even though the world of Cultivation is brutal and cruel, you cannot let down your conscience! If you do that, you’ll won’t accumulate guilt, guaranteeing you a smooth journey up the ranks of Cultivation!”

“In my Sword to Heaven Sect, if one obtains the legacy of a senior, then let him be. If he can keep it and become someone of great ability, then it is his luck. But if he cannot keep it, losing his life as a result, then he deserves it. You are a talented Disciple, so you have to think things through; if you want to plunder somebody’s legacy, then plunder the legacy of a strong person – that is the Dao of Cultivation!”

“Disciple understands!”

“Ok, you can leave.”

After that, the Sect Leader waved his hands, and the surrounding swords, upon detecting his Celestial Might, started shuddering incessantly.

At that time, Wu Yu, along with Sun Wudao, had arrived at the Celestial Beast

Gardens. The month of rest given by Su Yanli had passed, so according to the rules, he had to go back to work at the Gardens today.

Nothing eventful happened that day, so they passed the time by chatting.

Suddenly, they heard the caw of a Celestial Crane, which an obvious sign that visitors had descended onto the mountain. The congregation of servants leaped up to receive them, and Wu Yu also lifted his head to see who had come. After seeing who they were, his pupils contracted; it was Situ Jin “Shangxian” and his “Shangxian” friends.

“Wu Yu, hide, quickly!” Sun Wudao said urgently. After all, in the eyes of Situ Jin, Wu Yu was already dead! If Situ Jin saw him, then something bad was going to happen.

But it was too late. Wu Yu was just too prominent – Situ Jin had noticed him.

People don't have sin until they hide a jade* – The meaning of this old Chinese saying is treasure can bring trouble to its bearer.

Chapter 9: Celestial Ascendance Podium

Happy New Year LADS!

Here's to a more prosperous and wonderful 2016!!

And faster translation releases! (hopefully)

And more new novels picked up, as well as a better ranking for Swallowing the Heavens on Novel Updates!

This time, the total number of visiting “Shangxian’s” including Situ Jin was four.

Situ Jin was dressed in black and white attire, whilst the other male was dressed in a blue tunic, lanky like a pine, eyes arrogant and apathetic.

The other two people in the group were both ladies, gorgeous and seductive; even though Wu Yu was a Prince Heir in the Mortal Realm, it was still quite rare for him to see such beautiful women.

One woman was tall in stature, face cold and unmoving, beautiful but hard to get close to, whilst the other woman was short and cute, eyes bright and teeth white, her red clothing fully showing off the exquisite curves of her body, very seductive. But when facing Wu Yu and the servants, all that was exuded from them was haughtiness and pomposity.

“You!” Situ Jin jumped off the crane, showing off his nimble body, and with two steps, rushed to where Wu Yu was, staring at him, eyes wide with shock.

“After striking him down, I checked his body and verified his skull was broken. How is he not dead?” Situ Jin found the situation unbelievable.

“Situ Jin.” The three other Shangxian’s also walked forward to where they were, and upon noticing Wu Yu, also stopped in surprise.

“That slave hasn’t died yet?” The girl in the red tunic put her hand to her mouth.

“How did you not die?” Situ Jin exclaimed angrily. Back then, he wanted to kill Wu Yu in order to show off his might as well as to warn the servants to do their jobs better, but now, upon finding Wu Yu hadn’t died, he was afraid his friends would jeer at him.

Wu Yu knew that he wasn’t weaker than Situ Jin now, but considering his current status, he decided not to make a mess of things, otherwise he might be stripped of his qualifications to enter the entrance exam.

Therefore, he said “Shangxian, this servant’s life is very stubborn, so he was able to live. Thus, he wants to thank Shangxian for his mercy.”

Sun Wudao’s body was shaking from anxiousness, scared of what was going to happen later, but upon hearing what Wu Yu said, he relaxed slightly, saying hurriedly “Shangxian, thank you for your mercy! Last time, it was our fault for being too careless, not properly taking care of your Celestial Cranes. We swear it will not happen again next time!”

The Shangxian’s looked at each other, conferring with their eyes, then Situ Jin suddenly burst into laughter “My three friends, sorry for letting you guys see such a joke!”

“Situ Jin, you’re so weak! You whipped the slave for over half a day and still couldn’t kill him!” The red clothed girl said sweetly, then looked at her Celestial Crane “If it was my Mei Er that was treated badly, I’d torture the servant responsible until I’ve skinned him and removed his tendons alive!”

The sweet tone she spoke in made everyone speechless. She truly was a wolf in a sheep’s clothing!

Situ Jin, after hearing what the girl said, became incredibly embarrassed, and thinking quickly, he said to Wu Yu “Last time it was you who hurt my Lin Er, and we’ve not settled the animosity between us. How about this, here is a bunch of Celestial Crane “essence”, and if you eat them, I’ll let you off for what you’ve done.”

What Situ was talking about was obviously Celestial Crane **shit**.

The three other Shangxian’s couldn’t help but burst into laughter after hearing how Wu Yu was going to be punished.

“Situ Jin, you’re so vulgar!” Even the apathetic and tall girl could not hold back her giggles.

“Situ my brother, nice!” The blue clothed young man said.

“My friends, I’ve let you see such a joke on my part, so why not find some mirth in it while we’re at it!” Situ replied.

After hearing what they said, the faces of the surrounding servants became pale and colourless, but there was nothing they could do to help Wu Yu.

“The... “essence”, I’ll eat it” Sun Wudao was very worried that Wu Yu could not control his anger, so he hastily replied for him. Even though it was the first time in his life to receive such humiliation, he didn’t care, because everything was for Wu Yu!

The deep love from Sun Wudao moved Wu Yu.

They hadn’t known each other for long, and weren’t related by blood, so why was he going so far for himself?

“Don’t bother with them.” Wu Yu originally wanted to take revenge against them after the entrance exam, but it seemed fate had other plans in store for him. What he didn’t know was whether fighting and opposing them today would strip his qualifications for participating in the entrance exam.

“Wu Yu!” Sun Wudao exclaimed, shocked by his behavior, but Wu Yu took hold of his arm and pushed him back a few steps. A radiant golden light suddenly emitted from Wu Yu’s eyes, like a giant Beast had just awakened.

“You dare defy my orders?!” Situ Jin, who was quite pleased with his quick wit, had not expected Wu Yu would rebel against him, causing him to become very embarrassed and angry.

“Poor Wu Yu!” All the servants looked at him with eyes of pity “Last time he was very lucky to survive, but it looks like this time he cannot escape his fate.”

“Sigh, it was damned Zhao Chuan who brought such trouble on him...”

Situ Jin had to find an opportunity to punish him, otherwise he would be laughed at for not being able to kill a lowly servant. If he didn’t, then his efforts at wooing the red clothed girl would all be in vain.

“Today I will send you down to the Yellow River!”

Situ Jin was about to attack.

But right at that moment, a white robed girl appeared in front of him without a sound, causing his eyes to blur. He diverted his punch, smashing it on a nearby green rock, and with a Pa, the rock cracked.

“Who!?” Situ Jin shouted, face red with anger, teeth clenched so hard that one shattered, but when he looked closely at who it was, he shivered with fear, because he’d shouted at somebody he shouldn’t have “Big Sister Su, why have you come?”

Wu Yu did not expect Su Yanli’s appearance, and upon looking at her closely, he was shocked by her beauty. Not even the two Shangxian friends of Situ Jin could compare with her, whether in facial appearance or in the air they gave off; it was like comparing rice with the moon!

She radiated a fresh fragrance that refreshed the soul!

“This is Yan Li Mountain, my property.” Su Yanli said with an indifferent voice, waving her hand “Situ Jin and you three, Yan Li Mountain is off limits to you from now on. I hope I do not see you here again. ”

She was obviously very angry.

Situ Jin found the situation quite unbelievable “Big Sister Su, isn’t he just a servant, I....”

“He is resident of Yan Li Mountain. Whether he needs to be punished or not is not up to you.”

She did not speak loudly, and her tone was quite apathetic, but there was an undisputable might to it. In Wu Yu’s eyes, she was a real Shangxian, somebody who could be compared to Hao Tian Shangxian, somebody who could execute Daoist Arts and reverse Yin & Yang!

“Heng!”

The four Shangxian’s were angered by what Su Shangxian said.

Situ Jin breathed deeply, then looked at Su Yanli, uttering his words one by one “Big Sister Su, my little brother Situ Bright is 13 years old as of today, and has

already reached the peak of the Mortal Body Forging Phase, “Tongshen” Stage. If he was in the Mortal Realm, then people would have to call him Martial Sovereign. His talent, aha, is better than that of yours!”

The red clothed girl by the side also added “Reportedly, the Protector Sovereign of the Sect is preparing to make him her disciple after he successfully Condenses his Qi, and when that happens, his status within the Sect will not be lower than yours, Big Sister Su.”

The Protector Sovereign, her position within the Sect only lower than the Sect Leader’s.

Su Yanli’s lips opened slightly, face still impassive “Are you trying to threaten me?”

“We don’t dare! We’re just telling you in case you wanted to know!” Situ Jin smiled coldly, touching his blazingly hot face, before leaping onto his Celestial Crane, taking off into the clouds. And as he was leaving, he turned his head to stare at Wu Yu.

Their gazes met.

“Weng!” Situ Jin’s mind shook, as if assaulted, nearly falling off his Celestial Crane.

“Must be Su Yanli who did that.” He did not think of the possibility that it was Wu Yu who attacked him.

“Situ Bright? 13 years old, and already a Martial Sovereign?” Su Yanli turned her head to look at Wu Yu and Sun Wudao but was thinking of other things, before disappearing with the blink of an eye, as if she had never appeared.

“Thank you Shangxian!” Sun Wudao, who had escaped narrowly from disaster, hastily knelt down and bowed.

They managed to avoid a catastrophe today with much thanks to Su Yanli’s efforts, so Wu Yu was also very moved by her actions.

Wu Yu was very immersed into the joy of cultivation, so he had nearly forgotten about Situ Jin and what he’d done to himself, but today’s events had jogged his memory and added something to his to-do list, which was to make

Situ Jin kneel in front of himself beg for mercy.

“Thirteen years old, “Tongshen” Stage!” Thinking of what Situ Jin said about his little brother, Situ Bright, Wu Yu could not help but be shocked. When he reached the 5th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts at the age of 15, people already called him a Martial Arts Genius. But Situ Bright here had already reached the 10th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts, and he was only 13 years old!

“Right now, with my current status as a servant, fighting back against Outer Disciples if they bully me would bring me trouble, therefore I have to take hold of this last chance to pass the entrance exam and truly become a member of the Sect!

Before long, it was deep night.

“Wu Yu, tomorrow’s entrance exam, are you going?” Sun Wudao asked.

“Of course!”

“I’m getting old, so my legs aren’t as good as they used to be, and “Celestial Ascendance Mountain” is quite far from here, so let’s set off tonight?”

Sun, in actuality, shouldn’t go, since he was getting old; but the entrance exam was his dream, and he didn’t want to miss it for the world’s, because, at his age, seeing youngsters becoming Sect Disciples one by one brought joy and satisfaction to him!

“No need, I’ll piggyback you there.” Wu Yu wrapped his metal sword up carefully and strapped it onto his waist. If Sun Wudao asked him what it was, he would reply that it was a walking stick for tomorrow.

The day of the entrance exam finally arrived.

Sun Wudao tried to discourage Wu Yu from carrying him, but upon seeing that Wu Yu’s steps were still nimble and supple whilst piggybacking him, he quickly quieted down.

Celestial Ascendance Mountain! Today’s most popular place in the Blue Surge Mountain Range! All entrance exams took place there regardless of whether it was the entrance exam for servants or the entrance exam for Geniuses selected from the outside world. If one could pass the exam, one would be given the

chance to step onto the road of Cultivation!

From a Mortal to a Cultivator.

It was the first time Wu Yu had walked so far in the Blue Surge Mountain Range, and since today's entrance exam was the servant disciples greatest and most popular event, many servants had already set off for Celestial Ascendance Mountain before the sky had brightened. The entrance exam, however, would take place at noon.

"Your body has become fitter!" Sun Wudao was shocked that Wu Yu, who had to hike across mountains whilst carrying himself, was not tired in the slightest.

"I have the foundations of the 5th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase! It's just that the Soul Severing Powder has dragged me down."

Of course, that was not the real reason, and upon thinking that he could give Sun Wudao a big surprise soon, he could not calm down his excited heart.

Noticing Sun Wudao had fallen asleep on his back, he sped up, arriving at Celestial Ascendance Mountain just as the sky brightened. They were one of the first ones to arrive at the mountain – most of the crowd, mainly servants, had not turned up yet.

"Celestial Ascendance Road, Celestial Ascendance Podium! Disciples participating in the exam have to first show their qualifications at the bottom of the mountain, then enter the mountain to be tested, before exiting from the peak if they manage to pass. This is what they go through in the Celestial Ascendance Road, and after exiting from the peak, they have to go onto the Celestial Ascendance Podium to face one last test. Disciples who aren't participating in the event can directly make their way to the top of the mountain to watch the exam."

There were over ten thousand spectator podiums on the Celestial Ascendance Podium reserved for servant disciples in order to encourage them to cultivate, and official disciples of the Sect could hover in the sky on their Celestial Cranes to spectate the event, giving them a better position and better view.

Celestial Ascendance Mountain's height was similar to Yan Li Mountain's, but was several times wider, and by the time Sun Wudao had woken up, Wu Yu had

already found a good spot which could clearly view the entrance exam battle zone.

“We’re here? So fast?” Sun Wudao stared around his surroundings, vision still blurry and murky with sleep. He remembered every time he had to get here to watch the event, he had to pretty much exhaust himself, but this time, he only had to sleep and he was there.

“Yeah.” Wu Yu smiled faintly

“This spot is just too good!” Sun Wudao seemed like he had reverted back into a child, face full of excitement “Today, I can clearly see young geniuses become Celestials!”

“Next time, I’ll still piggyback you over.” Wu Yu smiled again.

Wu Yu was also very excited, because today was his chance to change his life, as well as fulfill his and Sun Wudao’s dreams.

People soon started to arrive, until the mountain filled up with ten thousand servants, voices filling the air.

Reportedly, many servants have already passed the qualifications checking at the bottom of the mountain, and were already on the Celestial Ascendance Road, preparing for the tests ahead.

It was soon going to be noon.

Wu Yu excused himself by saying his stomach hurt, which was a great excuse because there were no toilets on top of the mountain.

“But the event is going to start soon!” Sun Wudao really wanted Wu Yu to watch the entrance exam.

“It ok. I don’t have too much of an interest in it, so as long as you can watch it, I’m fine with that. I’m going to return very fast, so don’t walk around, or I’ll have to spend a long time finding you.”

“That’s fine. I’ll save a spot for you!”

Wu Yu was not worried that he’d walk around, because his legs weren’t as they used to be – even walking down the mountain was a problem for him. After waving goodbye, Wu Yu swiftly rushed down the mountain and prepared himself

for qualifications checking.

Chapter 10: Let Fate Decide Whether We Live or Die

The long awaited Chapter 10! Yes baby, 2 digits!

The so called qualifications checking was quite a simple process – one only had to report their full name and the Shangxian they served. The person in charge of the checking then had to check that with the information they hold in their record books to prove its validity. And according to that book, Wu Yu was 15 years old today, just meeting one of the requirements for participation.

“You’re at the 6th Heavenly Stage of the Mortal Body Forging Phase?” The qualification checker raised his head to look at Wu Yu with a doubting stare. It wasn’t because he wanted to deliberately give him trouble; it was just that in his record book, there were was nothing about Wu Yu’s Cultivational Status (the Stage and Phase of Cultivation he was at).

“You’re right.” Wu Yu nodded his head.

“Show me.”

It was going to be noon soon, and the majority of servants who were going to participate in the exam had already passed qualification checking, coming at a total of about 300.

Before the exam, all participators had to confirm their identities as well as confirm their Cultivational Status.

Behind the qualification checker were 100 healthy and young battlehorses, each dark black and with a fiery temper. And it seemed like they were not in a good mood today, because they were all panting loudly, bashing at the green stone floor with their enormous strength. Wu Yu was sure that the floor would crack if the “assault and battery” from the horses continued.

The battlehorses were all tied together with a thick rope, agglomerated to one point, and Wu Yu, under the supervision of the qualification checker, grasped

hold of the rope. The test to check whether one had reached the 6th Heavenly Stage was very simple – one only had to show that they could keep the horses in check with their strength and they would pass!

“Who is that?”

“I don’t know him!”

A portion of the spectators had not ascended the peak, remaining at the bottom of the mountain to spectate the qualifications checking. Wu Yu almost never ventured out of Yan Li Mountain, so not a lot of people knew him in the Celestial Sect.

“Pa!”

The qualification checker shook his whip, and instantly the air soon filled with whip shadows, striking onto the hides of the horses. The horses, stimulated by the pain, started to go berserk, running all over the place.

“Strong!”

That strike with the whip left Wu Yu in admiration.

The anger within the horses erupted, rope pulled taut, their feet sending swathes of dust into the air; it was like Wu Yu was standing on a battlefield!

“Come back!”

He knew that this was going to happen, so he grasped hold of the rope tightly with one hand, slightly bending his knees and digging his feet in the ground. His muscles, tendons, bones and organs all provided him with power, giving him the strength of a giant Beast.

“He!”

The 100 berserk battlehorses were pulled back!

“Success!”

The qualifications checker passed him a red rune sheet and said “This is a Red Fire Rune; if your life is in danger or you want to withdraw from the exam, then shatter it. A red light will start encircling you, and Disciples within the Sect will come and save you.”

“It’s actually a rune sheet!” Wu Yu looked at the red rune sheet, trying to figure out its composition, but the runes were too complicated, so in the end he had to give up. However, he did notice the flow of Celestial Power flowing through the rune.

Reportedly, rune sheets could only be created by strong Celestials.

He carefully hid the red rune sheet, then entered a small hole in the mountain. Above the entrance of the hole were three big words – Celestial Ascendance Road!

The entrance exam, first stage.

.....

“That Wu Yu, still not back!” Sun Wudao looked around left and right. By his side sat a fat servant who had stolen Wu Yu’s spot on the podium.

And with the blink of an eye, it was noon. From Sun’s vantage point, he would be able to clearly see the first servant to dash out and complete the Celestial Ascendance Road.

The battle on Celestial Ascendance Road, the battle on Celestial Ascendance Podium... whoever managed to survive those two tribulations would ascend to become a “Celestial” and a real Disciple of the Sect!

All around him were tens of thousands of servants, all craning their necks, moving their heads around, jostling for space. However, they did not dare make any sounds in case they angered the Celestials, so the wait for the start of the entrance exam passed silently.

Celestial Cranes danced in the sky, and riding them were the true Disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect. They were grouped together in groups of two or three, looking down from above to watch the spectacular entrance exam that was to happen.

But the most attention catching person today was the Coordinator of today’s event, the Daoist Arts Keeper Elder!

On top of the Celestial Ascendance Podium floated a white jade podium, several array diagrams blinking with light on its underneath. It was as if the wind

was blowing upon it, keeping it afloat in the air.

And on the white jade podium were three white jade chairs, the one in the middle the largest and the grandest. On it sat a white eyebrowed, white haired, white robed old man, face stern and strict, mighty and majestic.

He was the Daoist Arts Keeper Elder, “Woodsong”.

The seat on the left was empty, but the seat on the right was occupied by a white robed girl, who happened to be Su Yanli! Upon noticing that Su Yanli was sitting atop the flying podium, many servants of Yan Li Mountain instantly felt proud of themselves because they had such an august and mighty master!

“Niece Yanli, any good servants from your Yan Li Mountain participating in the entrance exam this time?” Woodsong asked casually.

He knew that with Yanli’s temperament and personality, she would not pay close attention to normal servants.

“Yes. One. His name is Wu Yu.” Su Yanli replied.

“In what ways is he unique?” Woodsong, now piqued with curiosity, asked again.

“I don’t know. That’s why I came today to spectate the entrance exam.”

“Oh so that’s why! Then we’ll have to pay close attention today...” Woodsong laughed mirthfully. Even his laugh was dignified, making people feel reverent towards him. After all, he was one of the most powerful beings in the Sword to Heaven Sect.

“Su Yanli actually came!”

Situ Jin and his cronies were also on the scene, flying high in the sky on their Celestial Cranes, hogging one of the best vantage points of the entrance exam battle zone.

“Situ Jin, what’s so interesting about a bunch of servants trying to enter the Sect? We were directly initiated into the Sect from outside, which means we’re ten times stronger than these servant brutes!” The red clothed girl boasted arrogantly.

“Huaqian You, we have quite a lot of time on hand, so why not watch these

servant brutes fight it out and find something to laugh about.” Situ Jin laughed.

The red clothed girl’s name was Huaqian You, and the tall blue clothed girl’s name was Liu Muxue. The other male in the group, lanky and gangly, was called Wang Yiyang.

In the Mortal Realm, they were all Martial Art Geniuses, the offspring of Martial Art Families. Situ Jin, especially, was the brood of a **Hidden Martial Art Family***, chosen to enter the Sect along with his three brothers. The big brother was called Situ Hong, he was the second brother, and the third brother, as well as the most overpowered one, was called Situ Bright.

“Situ Jin, let’s not be so proud of ourselves. There are, reportedly, three servants who have reached the 7th Heavenly Stage, stronger than us by one stage.”

“7th Heavenly Stage... that’s my brother’s Cultivation Status!” Situ Jin envied.

Reportedly, the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Road below had started.

“Let’s guess who the first three to reach the end of the Celestial Ascendance Road will be!”

.....

“Once you enter this door, fate will decide whether you live or die!”

Engraved upon a stone tablet in front of Wu Yu were these 13 words, written in lifeblood, overwhelming the mind, stupefying the soul!

“The **Dao*** of Cultivation is merciless and cruel. Once one sets off on that path, there is no looking back!”

Another stone tablet.

“To cultivate is to plunder. Only the strong can uphold justice”

The last stone tablet, and the largest one.

“That’s right. To cultivate is to plunder from the Heavens and the Earth; and the only way to uphold justice is to be strong!” Wu Yu, who had experienced some pretty rough times, really connected with the words on the stone tablets.

The 300 servant disciples participating in the exam were now inside the

mountain, enshrouded in darkness. Because there were no friends here, only rivals and competitors, the servants all put a little space in between each other.

Very soon the exam would officially commence; Sun Wudao was at the exit of the Celestial Ascendance Road, along with numerous Shangxians who were waiting to spectate the event. To Wu Yu, who desired to enter the Celestial Sect, today was the most important and most significant moment of his life!

There was no way that he wasn't excited!

“Only if I pass this test will I have the qualifications to challenge Hao Tian Shangxian!”

East Yue Wu Kingdom, he had to go back.

All of a sudden, chatter filled the cavern.

“That's Zhao Danlong! He has reportedly reached the 7th Heavenly Stage, with the strength of 200 battlehorses! His specialty is his Family in the Mortal Realm's Middle Class Technique <<Thirteen Swords of Zhao>>! To add to that, he's only 14 this year!”

Listening to the discussions taking place, Wu Yu quickly identified him, an arrogant and snobbish teen.

In actuality, all the 300 servants here were geniuses of the Mortal Realm too. Wu Yu, who was 15 years old, was the oldest one out of the lot, and not by a bit. The youngest one here seemed to only be 11 years old!

“Hey, isn't that Ju Huo? He's also reached the 7th Heavenly Stage, and is reportedly brought up by a mighty tiger in the wild. His master, a Core Disciple, really likes him, and has given him the Technique <<Eight Styles of Slaying Daemons>> and the Peak Footwork Technique <<Snake Illusion Steps>>. What adds to that very impressive resume is that he's only 13 this year!”

The person whom the crowd was talking about was a youngster draped in Beast furs, staring at the congregation with the eyes of a wild Beast.

There were a total of 3 servants who'd reached the 7th Heavenly Stage – the last one was called “Qing Mang”, a short 12 year old little girl. She had a distinctive pair of Azure eyes, and was also the servant of a Core Disciple. Her

parents were normal, ordinary people, and reportedly had no strength when she first arrived at the Sect, aged 7.

Her specialty Martial Arts were very powerful, <<Solitary Mountain Sword Shadows>> and <<A Little Bit of Azure Radiance>> (a Footwork Technique) respectively.

Even though the three were very powerful, Wu Yu's mission was to enter the Sect, not to become number 1, so there was no necessity for him to become enemies with them. He also quite respected the 3 teens, especially the 12 year old Qing Mang, because she, at this very young age, was already a 7th Heavenly Stage Expert!

“But, it's obvious that Situ Bright is more overpowered.”

As Wu Yu lamented, 20 Celestial Sect Disciples appeared at the front, the leader a black robed black haired teenage male, eyes deep and profound, horrifying and powerful. Only a Core Disciple could be that terrifying.

“Participants, the Celestial Ascendance Road will open soon. You will face three waves of attacks on the road from a bunch of wild Beasts close to becoming Daemons. The test, I warn you, is quite dangerous, to the point that some of our Outer Disciples may not be able to pass it. If you feel that your life is in danger, then do shatter the red rune sheet the qualifications checker gave, and we'll come to get you.”

The Core Disciple's words terrified quite a number of people, their faces turning pale and colourless.

“Among the 300 of you here, only the first 100 to dash out of the Celestial Ascendance Road will have the opportunity to battle it out on the Celestial Ascendance Podium. So this $\frac{1}{3}$ chance... I hope you guys will do your best to grasp hold of.”

“Remember, only if you pass the exam can you step onto the path of becoming a Celestial, and from then on live a hearty life, slaying daemons and demons! If you can't face a few hundred wild Beasts, then how are you going to slay daemons and demons?”

“The disciples of my Sword to Heaven sect are sword wielding heroes! It's time

to start the exam, but I pray you engrave this word into the very bottom of your hearts before you set off – KILL!”

As he uttered the final word, the cavern started to shake. A door descended onto the wall, opening to show a road leading into darkness and blood and slaughter.

“The Battle of the Celestial Ascendance Road, Start!”

Only 100 people would make it into the final round.

The road was quite wide.

The 300 servants all scrambled to get in front, charging onto the path, scared of missing the chance of getting into the first 100. Wu Yu, however, was quite relaxed, because he understood deeply that those at the front would always suffer the strongest attacks.

Drawing his metal sword from its wrappings, he set off with a steady pace, moving forward at the center of the path.

Shua Shua!

The majority of the people had already entered the door into the darkness, and unexpectedly, what waited on the other side was a wide expanse of space; and though dim and gloomy, one could see that there were quite a lot of plants and vegetables growing underneath the ground.

The 300 servants spread apart, each clenching their teeth, swiftly speeding ahead.

“Red Horned Qiu Snake!”

Just as they entered the expanse, somebody screamed and shrieked.

To be able to make a 6th Heavenly Stage expert scream so tragically.. the Red Horned Qiu Snake must be quite a terrifying beast.

“Snake?”

This made Wu Yu think of the snake daemon Wan Qing.

Si Si!

In front, a head the size of a washbasin suddenly popped out from next to the

underground plants, emitting a stench that pounced at their noses. It was a black snake with a triangular head, featuring blood red horn on top of its forehead, as sharp as a sword, carrying venomous poison.

The servants, startled, looked around for any other snakes, and as far as the eyes could see, inside the packed and dense field of underground plants, there hid several hundred cold-blooded Red Horned Qiu Snakes!

Hidden Martial Arts Family* – Basically a Martial Arts Family that doesn't participate in worldly affairs. They are usually stronger than ordinary Martial Arts Families though.

Chapter 11: The Demonic Monkey Evolves!

Sorry for the delay, but this was a long chapter haha

Hope you guys enjoy it!

They had just arrived in this jungle full of underground plants, yet red light was flashing ahead in the darkness. Somebody had already been subject to a fatal attack, and had decided to shatter their red runesheet.

Even though all the servants participating in the entrance exam had reached the 6th Heavenly Stage, their toughness of mind, battle experience and Martial Art Techniques may be different.

Some servants had retreated in face of this imminent danger, whilst others charged forward into the forest, shouting great and loud battlecries!

Wu Yu, in the darkness, could see some people around him engaged in battle.

“It has started!”

Wu Yu grasped hold tightly of his metal sword, razor sharp and deadly, but the scales and flesh of the Red Horned Qiu Snakes were quite tough and resilient, almost as hard as that of a snake daemon, so he was unsure if it would do any damage.

No time for thought!

Ding!

The swordlike red horn struck at him with the power of a giant Beast, but Wu Yu was prepared, swinging his sword sideways with two hands to parry it.

“Move!”

He wanted to push aside the snake and continue moving forward, but he had miscalculated its strength. Never did he expect that it'd also have the power of 100 battlehorses, comparable to that of his!

“Tear!”

Wu Yu’s movements were swift and fast, slightly pushing aside the snake’s head, creating an opening for him to attack. Switching his sword over to his right hand, he gave a mighty slash, deeply embedding it into the snake’s neck, opening a wound that gushed snake blood all over the ground.

Hiss!

Surprisingly, the snake wasn’t dead yet, shrieking and struggling in pain, causing Wu Yu’s sword to get stuck within its skeleton.

“When you’re fighting a snake, hit its Qicun (literally means 7 inches, but its figurative meaning is a snake’s seven weak points)!”

Upon recalling this important fact, he quickly reacted before the snake put up any resistance. Using his great strength to pull out his sword, he twirled it, the blade shining cruelly in the darkness, before lunging forward, plunging it deep into the snake’s heart.

The Red Horned Qiu Snake collapsed weakly.

“What a pity!”

The snake was long, and the scales, flesh, guts... were quite precious materials that would fetch a good price, but they were the Sword to Heaven Sect’s property and there was no time to skin and collect them.

Wu Yu lifted his metal sword and snaked around the battles that were taking place between the servants and the snakes, reaching the front of the group before long. In actuality, many people had already finished off the snakes they were facing off against, but none were moving forward, afraid they would be surrounded by wild Beasts if they went by the lonesome.

“You seemed quite relaxed, in that battle of yours with the snake.” Suddenly, somebody by the side said; startled, Wu Yu looked closer, to find out that it was Zhao Danlong, one of the servants who had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage.

“But, I’m going to be No. 1 today! The Qi Condensing Pill is mine!”

With that, he bursted out shocking speed, speeding ahead into the distance!

“Zhao Danlong, very fast!”

“I think that he’s going to be the first one out of here.”

“No, I don’t think so... Qing Mang is long gone already.”

In between the tragic slaughter happening between man and beast, people would frequently drop out, or finish off their opponents and move forward, chatting along the way.

“The first one out?”

Wu Yu thought for a while, and concluded that being the first one out would have some benefits, because he would be in the limelight, under the eyes of tens of thousands of people!

His previous mission was to get into the top 100, but upon reflection, he decided to aim for number 1, as he wanted Sun Wudao, in his immense anticipation, to see him come out of the mountain first.

“Move!”

He sped off like a ray of golden light in the darkness.

<<Monkey Ghost Steps>> was a footwork technique most suitable for moving in the forests, so he, unlike most of the other servants, managed to evade the Red Horned Qiu Snakes, saving precious time by not engaging into battle with them. Upon noticing that there wasn’t much people around his immediate vicinity, he estimated that he was at the front of the “troop”.

“Let’s rest here for a while.”

If he moved forward, it was 100% guaranteed that he’d suffer the the brunt of the next wave of attacks.

There were around 20 servants nearby Wu Yu, and among them there were 3 who were more eye catching than the rest, able to fight off multiple servants by the lonesome, as they had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage.

“I’m 15 years old, yet I’ve only reached the 4th Heavenly Stage. Their talent in Martial Arts is multiple times better than mine!” Wu Yu could not help but smile bitterly. Of course, he wasn’t depressed, because he had only begun cultivating (recultivating haha) one month ago!”

“Swamp!”

After passing through the densely packed forest, he stepped into the next zone, an endless swamp! The mud in the swamp was soft and weak, hiding numerous savage Beasts, air bubbles bubbling up frequently without end.

“Ah!”

Right at that moment, a servant rushed into the swamp. Suddenly, the mud began to shake, and a three foot long black beast burst out from under, biting hold of the unlucky servant, its sharp teeth puncturing his skin and flesh, then proceeding to drag him under the swamp!

“Save me!”

The servant screamed painfully and tragically.

There was no time for him to shatter the red runesheet, because the attack was too sudden and too ferocious.

Wu Yu was just by the sidelines, so upon noticing the danger the unlucky servant was in, he immediately jumped into the fire to rescue him, because **saving people was like firefighting** (means one has a duty to save people if they are in danger right in front of one’s eyes)

“It’s actually a Giant Axemountain Crocodile!”

Wu Yu recognised the black scaled Giant Beast, because he had fought against one back in the days when he was still a 5th Heavenly Stage expert, although he was not its opponent.

“The Giant Axemountain Crocodile’s scales are as hard as metal, so hard that normal blades cannot puncture through it, therefore it’s only weakness is its eyes!”

Because he was quite familiar with this Beast, everything he knew about it instantly popped up in his mind, and without further ado, he jumped forward in front of its eyes, transferring power to his arms, and thrust out his sword!

Pu Chi!

The longsword poked through its eyes and into its brains!

The Giant Axemountain Crocodile died instantly.

Wu Yu calmly dragged the injured servant from its mouth, to find out it wasn't a he, but a she, and quite a delicate and pretty one at that. Her face was pale and drained white after her ordeal, trembling whilst staring at Wu Yu, her saviour.

"I'll be going first."

Wu Yu did not want to engage in conversation, because time was pressing, so with the blink of an eye, he entered the swamp, using <<Monkey Ghost Steps>> to run on its surface, controlling himself so he wouldn't fall and sink.

A black robed Celestial Sect Disciple arrived at the side of the injured servant, and upon seeing that she was unharmed, he looked at Wu Yu's back, which was disappearing into the distance, before turning back to say to the girl "Next time you're in danger, snap the red runesheet!"

"Yes! Shangxian!"

"Thankyou." After the Shangxian had left, the girl servant looked at the direction Wu Yu left in, thanking him in her heart. All servants were competitors in this exam, and yet that person had wasted time to save herself, a rare and scarce act of goodwill.

On his journey through the swamp, Wu Yu used his immense strength, which was stronger than that of a wild beast's, to kill a few more savage Beasts! Normally, wild beast's had great power, but their killing techniques were not as intricate and profound as those of Celestial's and Human's, so when Wu Yu's strength was similar to that of his wild beast opponents, dominating them, gaining the upper hand wasn't hard.

There were still body shapes in front of him.

"I've finally exited the swamp!"

Wu Yu stepped on solid ground at last, leaving the godforsaken swamp behind, bringing him a sense of relief, but he knew deep within his heart that the endless heaps of rocks in front of him was where the most terrifying test was going to take place. There were a total of 3 waves of beasts; this was the last one.

"Kill!" Zhao Danlong gave a loud shout, before rushing into the darkness.

The remaining servants gradually exited the swamp to arrive at the stone heaps. It seemed that none of them were weak; After all, they were all Martial Art Geniuses, and had been trained under the Sword to Heaven Sect's watchful eye!

Wu Yu increased his pace.

“Bloodthirsty Demon Monkeys!”

In front of him was a narrow path, surrounded by giant stones. It led to a road, and the end of the road was the exit of the Celestial Ascendance Road, which was the dream place of all servants.

But, on that narrow path, blocking the way, were a total of around 300 Bloodthirsty Demon Monkeys!

This type of monkey was black furred, and had blood red tattoos swirling around its body. It also had a pair of red eyes, and was also 20 feet tall – Wu Yu and company weren't even as wide as their arms! Reportedly, Bloodthirsty Demon Monkeys loved the taste of fresh blood, so upon smelling their beloved delicacy, they would go crazy!

The stench of fresh blood drifted from the swamp into the stone heaps.

Therefore, the eyes of the Bloodthirsty Demon Monkeys were all bright red, their giant hands hammering their chests, the path and the nearby rocks to express their excitement. The stench of savagery and brutality filled the air, blocking all the servants from reaching the end of the road and achieving their dreams.

There was only one way to exit the Celestial Ascendance Road, and that was to rush through all the Bloodthirsty Demon Monkeys that were blocking the way.

This time, the Beasts were densely packed together, so there were no gaps for anybody to slip through.

“Kill!”

The first 20 servants that were able to rush out from the swamp were all elites, and with the three 7th Heavenly Stage experts as the leaders, they were an unstoppable force! Servants who had just rushed out from the swamp also joined the group as it rushed, adding to its power and might.

Wu Yu was within the “troop” of servants.

Boom!

They had finally collided with the “Monkey Wall”!

Tear!

Wu Yu slashed his metal sword at the Demon Monkey’s torso, tearing apart its skin, biting into its flesh.

“Roar!”

The Demon Monkey, angered and stimulated by the pain, raised its monstrous arm, slapping down hard at him. Wu Yu stayed calm, unfazed, lifting his left arm to block the incoming palm.

Pa! His feet sank into the floor, creating a depression on the road!

“Such great strength!”

Even though he lamented at the monkey’s power, he was quite happy with the end result, because <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> gave his body greater resistance to attacks than other people! Not only that, it also increased his regenerative abilities by multiple times the normal rate!

His power, resistance and regenerative ability were all many times that of normal people!

Wu Yu transferred his strength to his arms, swinging his sword horizontally, and as the monkey’s attack was about to land on him, his swordpoint swiftly flitted by its neck, instantly opening a wound that spurted blood out by the gallons.

Boom!

The Bloodthirsty Demon Monkey collapsed onto the floor.

But, it was just one.

There were more than 300 monkeys blocking the road; even with servants unceasing joining the battle group from behind as well as the servants who had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage leading the charge, they still hadn’t managed to charge through, only slaying 40 monkeys in the outer rim.

“It’s impossible to slay all the monkeys before leaving the path.”

“That’s why a group attack is not beneficial and not fair towards the stronger servants, as the weaker ones could just sneak through any gaps in the wall they create. So that means the best method to exit this godforsaken place is to use whatever means necessary to charge into the monkeys by the lonesome, then killing all monkeys in the way to create a path of blood that leads to the outside.”

Wu Yu was sure that other people had also noticed this point, especially the three servants who had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage, because they had already executed their footwork techniques, charging into enemy lines. The Demon Monkeys all had tall and burly statures, so it was quite easy for them to move around their legs and under their hips.

“Rush!”

He had already made it here, facing many trials and tribulations along the way, so he wanted to win and become first place. And like that, he was the 4th person to rush into the mass of monkeys.

“Its you!”

Zhao Danlong, who was covered in blood from all the fighting, had noticed Wu Yu’s appearance.

In actuality, Zhao was also very exhausted, but Wu Yu’s arrival threatened him, giving him motivation to fight and sprint faster, as Wu Yu had not reached the 7th Heavenly Stage yet. If Wu Yu managed to beat him, then he would lose a lot of face!

Whoosh!

Wu Yu continued sprinting forwards.

It was quite lucky that he cultivated <<Monkey Ghost Steps>>, because it gave him a comprehensive understanding on how the Demon Monkeys moved, so there wasn’t much pressure on him when moving around the Monkeys, dodging all attacks they launched at him.

“So what this final zone really tests is not battle ability, but your agility and footwork techniques!”

He looked forward, and noticed that Qing Mang, with her <<A Little Bit of Azure Radiance>> footwork technique, had already rushed up to claim the lead in the race, a little shining azure dot in the distance.

Ju Huo wasn't slow either, just behind Qing Mang.

Zhao Danlong had great battle ability, but his footstep technique was weaker than the two, so he was third.

"No, I'll only be fourth if I go on like this." Wu Yu thought whilst battling. <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> gave him great defence against attacks, so the Demon Monkeys could do nothing of harm against him.

"There's a Demon Monkey that's evolving into Daemon! It's absorbed too much of our blood! Goddamnit!" Zhao Danlong shouted, instantly terrifying the servants behind him.

The evolvment of a Beast into a Daemon was a very important transformation.

With the Bloodthirsty Demon Monkey's foundation and talent, evolving into a Daemon would grant it an immense increase in battle ability, maybe even reaching the power level of a 9th Heavenly Stage Tongshen expert!

Luckily, evolving into a Daemon took time.

Daemon's were much stronger than normal Beasts, but weren't that horrifying for the servants, so after their initial shock, they resumed their charge to break through the Demon Monkey's. And by then, Wu Yu finally noticed the monkey that was about to evolve into a Daemon,

Ka Cha, Ka Cha!

It's body bloated, weight already two times as heavy than a normal Monkey Demon, the red within its eyes slowly disappearing, obvious signs it was developing a consciousness. Once it develops a conscience, the monkey would have the intelligence and sentience of a human, and would also gain the ability to transform into a human, allowing it to mix into human society and eat people without suspicion.

"Kill!"

The Monkey Daemon blocked the way out, so slaying it was a must if one wanted to get past.

Zhao Danlong, Qing Mang and Ju Huo, the three 7th Heavenly Stage experts, each executed an attack at the same moment against the monkey, engaging in battle.

The techniques they used were <<Thirteen Swords of Zhao>>, <<Solitary Mountain Sword Shadows>> and <<Eight Styles of Slaying Daemons>> respectively!

All top notch Middle Class Martial Techniques!

“One Sword Dominating the Clouds!”

“Azure Cloud Sword Shadows!”

“Slaying Daemons Style!”

The three 7th Heavenly Stage servants weren't bad, their attacks leaving behind numerous cuts and scratches on the Monkey Daemon, but none of them were fatal. Also, their energy depletion was enormous, so before long they were all exhausted and panting.

It wasn't because Wu Yu didn't want to help; it was just that the three were too overbearing and domineering, so he couldn't find an opportunity to help out.

“Roar!”

Their attacks angered the Monkey Daemon, so it gathered its blood and Qi and roared, spitting it out, letting it permeate the air. Whatever the blood and Qi touched started to corrode, so there was nothing Zhao Danlong and company could do but retreat swiftly!

Wu Yu finally found his chance.

<<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>>.

Wu Yu grasped hold tightly of his sword, before charging past the three, launching himself straight at the monkey like the roiling waves of the East Sea!

This time, he was the closest one to the exit of the Celestial Ascendance Road!

Chapter 12: Qi Condensing Pill, Daemon Suppressing Sword

Sorry guys for the late release!

“It seems like the battle on the Celestial Ascendance Road is reaching its final stage. In the end, who will be the first one out?” Woodsong said whilst stroking his long beard, staring at the exit of the road with squinted eyes.

Su Yanli also looked forward to seeing who was going to win first place “Reportedly, the final zone of the exam tests the footwork technique of the servants, so I think Qing Mang will be the first one out. Her footwork technique <<A Little Bit of Azure Radiance>> is quite profound and exquisite, a Middle Class Martial Art that is quite close to being a High Class Martial Art!”

“Ju Huo was born in the wild and grew up surrounded by wild animals, so he also has a chance.”

It was not only their eyes that were focused on the exit of the Celestial Ascendance Road; the eyes of the ten thousand other spectators were too!

They consisted of ten thousand servants, some Outer Disciples, as well as a few Core Disciples! Also, numerous other pairs of eyes from the strongest people of the Sect were fixated on Celestial Ascendance Mountain from other parts of the Blue Surge Mountain.

“I think it’s going to be Zhao Danlong, because his Ancestral Martial Technique <<Thirteen Swords of Zhao>> is the most powerful out of all the participating servants!”

“No, not necessarily... Qing Mang’s <<Solitary Mountain Sword Shadows>> is a Martial Art specialised to slay Daemons!”

Discussions regarding who was going to claim the crown was all over the mountain.

But Sun Wudao was not in the mood to listen to them and join them.

“Wu Yu that brat, always making me worry over him. Where in the world is he?” Sun Wudao looked around his surroundings to find Wu Yu. He originally wanted to leave his spot to look for him, but he was worried that Wu Yu would return when he was out.

And at that moment, the whole mountain burst into noise.

Sun Wudao gazed at the entrance to find somebody rush out of the exit!

“Somebody has come out.”

All the noise and chatter and subsided after the appearance of the teenager.

Except for the servants, the many powerful Celestials on scene, even though they were quite far from the exit, were able to see clearly the facial features of the teenager.

The person was taller than what they expected, taller than the oldest contender Zhao Danlong, who was 14. It seemed that the young man was not one of the servants that had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage.

“Who’s that?”

More than ten thousand pairs of eyes fixated on the young teen on the Celestial Ascendance Podium, so surprised that nobody made any sound.

Even the Daoist Arts Keeper Elder Woodsong was shocked, staring at the teenager with squinted eyes for over half a day, to find that he’d never seen him before. It seemed that the teen was quite old already.

Su Yanli, who was next to Woodsong, was the first person to accurately guess who the teenager was.

“Wu Yu.” Her red lips opened slightly, eyes glinting with surprise, unable to calm herself down.

The young man on the podium looked up, meeting her gaze. What was surprising about his eyes was that it showed his calm, unfazed under the gaze of tens of thousands of people.

He had already reached such a stage! Su Yanli remembered that only a while

ago he had only managed to defeat Zhao Chuan by a hairsbreadth.

“So he’s Wu Yu?” Woodsong understood now why Su Yanli praised him so. Upon seeing him for the first time, he noticed that Wu Yu was special. “This Wu Yu has an unique air about him, but it’s a pity that he’s too old.”

Not many people knew who Wu Yu was and which mountain he belonged to.

Everybody was looking at him with shock and surprise.

“Sun... Sun Wudao...” A servant from Yan Li Mountain walked over to Sun Wudao from his viewing spot, which wasn’t quite far away, to point at the teenager with trembling fingers “Wu... Wu Yu....”

“What?” Sun Wudao’s hearing ability and eyesight had deteriorated, so he wasn’t able to make out who the teenager was.

“That’s Wu Yu.”

“Wu Yu?”

Sun Wudao’s eyes widened in shock. He had wondered previously why the blurry young man on the podium resembled Wu Yu so much, so it was quite a surprise to him it actually was Wu Yu! That scared him a lot “This Wu Yu... He said that he wanted to go to toilet, but it seems like he got lost and wandered over to the podium. What am I going to do?!!”

Sun thought that Wu Yu ran onto the podium by accident.

“Sun Wudao, Wu Yu charged onto the podium from the Celestial Ascendance Road!” The servant trembled in shock.

“Don’t joke about that.....” Sun Wudao replied.

He stared at Wu Yu, and Wu Yu also raised his head, meeting his gaze. Wu Yu remembered which direction Sun Wudao was in, and was clearly able to see Sun looking at him. He had finally achieved his goal, so his excitement receded to tranquil and calm.

He waved at Sun to show that it really was himself there on the podium.

“I did it.”

Upon seeing the old man so excited and joyous, Wu Yu felt incredibly satisfied.

He had no idea how ecstatic Sun was, how Sun was crying with tears of joy, but he knew that Sun was happy, and that was all that he wished for.

Of course, he still hadn't passed the entrance exam yet.

“Wu Yu, he has **reached the sky with one step!** (means that a low profile person who was not noticed much before has stunned everybody by succeeding)”

Sun Wudao's hands, which were grasping hold of the sides of his armchair, were trembling. His eyes had brightened with joy and elation; maybe to him, the person who was standing on the podium was not Wu Yu, but himself!

In the sky.

“Situ Jin...”

The red clothed girl Huaqian You nearly fell off her Celestial Crane.

“I see it.” Situ Jin said, his expression showing a dismay he had never shown before.

Wang Yiyan's face was also quite pale and gloomy “This is not possible! Back when you were whipping him, Situ Jin, he had no Martial Ability. How is it possible that he participated in the entrance exam and claimed number one today?”

Liu Muxue eyes glinted with the brutality of a wolf “Nobody can reach the 6th Heavenly Stage from no Martial Ability in 1 month; it's quite obvious he hid his Martial Ability from us, so it was no wonder that you weren't able to whip him to death, Situ Jin. This means that brat has high levels of tolerance – perhaps he has something to hide which he cannot tell anybody about.”

Colour drained from Huaqian You's face “Situ Jin, because of the way you treated him, I'm afraid he'll want to take revenge against you. There's a high possibility of that happening because of his pettiness!”

Situ Jin smiled savagely, and replied “Don't be scared, he's just a slave! And like I said before, coming out first is nothing. Weren't there a lot of people who relied on chaos in the battlefield and luck to charge out of the road first?”

Li Muxue said “I'm not scared; it's just his petty personality makes me want to

vomit.”

“Let me say it again. There’s still one more part to the entrance exam, so as long as he doesn’t become an Outer Disciple, he’ll always be lower than us in status. Also, I have my little brother to support me, so why should I be scared of a Mortal brute?”

What he said was true.

In the last stage of the Celestial Ascendance Road, Wu Yu grasped hold of the opportunity when when the three 7th Heavenly Stage Experts retreated, bursting forward, chopping off the leg of a Demon Monkey with <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>>, then rushing out of the road in the space created by the absence of its leg. He did not win honourably, but at least he succeeded! The trio were still back in the road, blocked by the injured and angered Demon Monkey, battling to get out.

“Congratulations, Wu Yu, for being the first one to rush out of the Celestial Ascendance Road! Your name will be forever engraved within the history of the Sword to Heaven Sect!”

Woodsong’s voice resounded within the mountain.

The Sword to Heaven Sect had always recorded the first one to rush out of the Celestial Ascendance Road in its history. The entrance exam was an event that allowed one’s name to resound throughout the Heavens easily!

“Wu Yu! Wu Yu!”

Tens of thousands of people were passionately chanting Wu Yu’s name.

He was currently the dream and the pride of all servant disciples! To become an Outer Disciple from a servant was a legend, an aspiration to the servants, the goal which they could put all their efforts in. If they could not succeed before 16 years old, then they would live a life like Sun Wudao’s life, always lamenting and regretting.

All servants wanted to become Celestials! It was their desire, their dream!

“Ka Cha!”

Upon seeing the championing Wu Yu received, Situ Jin fell into an incredibly

bad mood. He thought that Wu Yu's glory was a mocking laugh at him. The anger caused him to clench his fists tight.

On the other side, after confirming everything he was seeing was true, Sun Wudao fell into absolutely shock, eyes turning rosy and ruddy.

“Happy! So Happy!”

Many servants from Yan Li Mountain were congregated around Sun Wudao, firing envious and respectful gazes at him, something that he'd never received in the whole of his life.

And at that moment, Qing Mang, Ju Huo and Zhao Danlong successfully slayed the Demon Monkey and rushed out of the path.

“You shameless man, rushing out of the road because of my efforts. Watch me slay you!” Zhao Danlong's face was red with anger, lifting his sword to ready himself for battle with Wu Yu.

“Stop” Woodsong said softly, causing Zhao's temper to subside. He stared at Wu Yu ferociously, then murmured under his breath “Wait until the battle on the Celestial Ascendance Podium. I'll make you regret you were ever born!”

Wu Yu did “cheat” by winning because of other people's efforts, but he hadn't broken any rules, so he didn't care. And anyways, it was too early to be happy, as there was still the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium.

Gradually, 100 servants scrambled out of the road, the bloodstains on their body eye catching under the radiant rays of the sun.

After the first 100 servants were sorted out, the rest of the servants had to leave through the bottom of the mountain, because they did not have the qualifications to step onto the Celestial Ascendance Podium.

Some servants nearly made it by just a bit, but reality was harsh, so all they could do was lament and regret.

The entrance and exit of the Celestial Ascendance Road closed, signalling the end of the first half of the entrance exam.

100 young men and young women, under the eyes of tens of thousands, displayed their will to battle, their roiling anger, their passionate desire to step

onto the road of Celestials, to transcend and ascend!

The place they were on was the Celestial Ascendance Podium, a podium that was 1000 feet wide. There was a 100 feet deep pit that surrounded the podium; if one was knocked off into the pit, then they were out of the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium.

Woodsong stood up, face indifferent and apathetic, radiating Celestial might! Wu Yu was very excited to see such a powerful Celestial again. After arriving in the Sword to Heaven Sect, Wu Yu's horizons had broadened, not only limited to East Yue Wu and its neighbouring kingdoms.

“Out of the 100 of you, only 30 will enter the Sword to Heaven Sect and become one of its true Disciples!”

“From 300 to 30, there is a 1/10 chance that one can become a real disciple of the Sect. This is because we want to ensure that those who succeed in entering the Sect are all real Martial Arts Geniuses!”

“The road to becoming a Celestial is dangerous – one has to battle against the Heavens, battle against the Earth and battle against Daemons and Demons! Those without great potential or great determination cannot enter the Dao of Celestials, because it will only lead injuries and death and the wasting of life!”

“You have all been able to make it here, so I'm sure you already know of some of the obstructions and dangers of the Celestial Road, therefore I'll not elaborate on this topic.”

“The rule of the Battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium is that participants who are shatter their red runesheets, or are knocked down from the podium will be eliminated from the exam. Remember, no killing is permitted, because those who kill have vile temperaments and cannot become Celestials.”

“When there are only 30 people left standing on the podium, the battle will conclude, and the exam will end. You can form alliances, enact guerilla warfare, hold a battle royale... whatever you like, but remember, you're eliminated once you're knocked out of the podium.”

This was the only rule of the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium.

It seemed quite simple, but it was actually very dangerous, because battle

royales were much like real battles between Celestials, where there were no true allies, no true enemies. What one could only do was be on guard whilst cooperating with other.

The remaining servants may not be the strongest 30, but they would definitely have something unique to themselves to be able to last till the end. Even if one only hid and dodged in the battle royale and managed to make it till the end, it was one of his abilities, his strong points, nothing more.

“Of course, if it was only like that, then there would be meaning in hosting this battle.”

Woodsong laughed after saying that, stimulating the curiosity of the crowd.

“We have a traditional custom in our entrance exams, and that is the “Celestial Ball Plundering” event! Today, the lucky disciple who manages to obtain the Celestial Ball will receive three generous prizes. The first prize is the right to directly become an Outer Disciples, as well as to leave early before the battle ends. Of course, this isn’t the most important gift out of the three. The following two treasures are! The first treasure, is a Qi Condensing Pill!”

Upon hearing the name of the pill, the crowd went into an uproar! The Qi Condensing Pill was a real medical pill, and reportedly could only be made by Jindan Celestials, so it was very expensive and precious! It may not have an effect on people in the Mortal Body Forging Phase, but it could help one breakthrough and reach the Qi Condensing Celestial Roots Stage from the Mortal Body Forging Phase!

It was something that a Qi Condensing Celestial Roots Celestial like Su Yanli would crave!

Of course, it was only one of the two treasures.

“The second prize, is a top grade Mortal weapon! It’s name is Daemon Suppressing Sword! It’s might can rival that of normal Mana Weapons!

Mana Weapons were weapons that could only be used by Celestials.

Daemon Suppressing Sword!

Wu Yu’s eyes seared, because that sword was better by many times than the

one he was holding right now. It's value was comparable to that of top class Martial Arts, and was many times more precious than high class Martial Arts!

Qi Condensing Pill, Daemon Suppressing Sword... Those items could make many Outer Disciples' eye's go red with greed, such as Situ Jin and his cronies.

Only the 13 year old Situ Bright could have the qualifications to wield the Daemon Suppressing Sword and ingest the Qi Condensing Pill.

“The Celestial Ball Plundering event will take place alongside the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium. Whoever obtains the Celestial Ball and manages to hold onto it for more than 60 breaths will win the Celestial Ball Plundering event.”

“But if the ball is stolen, and you snatch it back, the timer resets!”

“And if there's only 30 people left on the podium, signalling the end of the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium, yet nobody has managed to snatch the Celestial Ball and hold on to it for 60 seconds, I'll take away the Qi Condensing Pill and Daemon Suppressing Sword.”

And like that, Woodsong finished his announcement.

The battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium, START!

Chapter 13: The Big Battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium

Chapter 13 is out!

Edited by: TCK and Kradok

The battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium was fundamentally different to the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Road.

The battle of the Celestial Ascendance Road took place in a sealed cavern, and the objective was to slay beasts and daemons.

The battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium, however, was a brutal battle royale that took place under the eyes of tens of thousands.

The Qi Condensing Pill and the Daemon Suppressing Sword only added fuel to the fire. The rewards stimulated the greed of everyone participating, to fight hard and snatch the Celestial Ball.

There was not a single person among the finalists whose eyes did not reflect the yellow greed in their hearts. The only emotion being projected out was the desire to obtain glory and the treasures that came along with it.

Wu Yu was no exception.

The so-called 'Celestial Ball' was currently in Woodsong's hands. It was a white sphere, with a landscape painting which looked quite like a map engraved upon it. Nobody knew what the ball was made out of.

The objective was to be in possession of the ball for more than 60 breaths continuously. If one succeeded in doing so, they would win the event and win the prizes!

Of course, one had to ensure that they were still on the podium to win.

The eyes of the spectating servants were burning with excitement and expectation, giving immense pressure to the participating servants. To add to

that, numerous Sect Disciples were also viewing the exam from the sky, adding to stress that the participating servants currently felt.

“Once I drop the Celestial Ball, the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium will begin!” Woodsong’s voice resounded through the mountain.

Huo!

The moment that everyone had been waiting for finally arrived. The ball was tossed into the air, in a beautiful arc, before dropping down with horrendous speed.

Woodsong silently painted a target on Wu Yu’s back by manipulating the descent of the ball to make it fall near him, and upon noticing that, almost all the participators in the exam charged towards him.

Wu Yu frowned as danger descended upon him.

“The start of the battle is the time when there are most competitors active. Whoever holds the ball will become the focus of everyone’s attacks. I’m not that strong compared to the other participators, so forcibly holding onto the ball is a joke.”

After analyzing his situation, Wu Yu knew what he had to do. He would try to find a gap and sneak out when most of the participators had charged near him to avoid the ensuing battle. And it was just like he predicted; after he managed to sneak out, his original position burst with people, and the battle over the Celestial Ball begun.

“Phew.”

Wu Yu stood near the edge of the podium, silently observing the mob fight it out, making it very difficult for him to join the fray.

There were some people who had the same idea as him.

The majority of the participants were fighting for the Celestial Ball, but some people were on the sidelines, waiting for the right moment to strike.

It was noon, and the sun was high in the sky, emitting warm rays of light that felt comfortable on the skin. The rays shined on Wu Yu, stimulating his skin and

flesh to radiate a pale golden light.

“The fifth technique of the <<Incredible Vajra Body>> is <<Golden Battle Blood>>. I think it’s most suitable to cultivate this technique in a battle under the sun, because I can absorb True Sunfire and merge it with my blood to form boiling Golden Battle Blood! And once the battle blood spreads throughout every inch of my body, I will reach the 5th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, which was my Martial Cultivation level 3 years ago.”

He had changed his blood before, so Wu Yu was quite familiar with the process. Of course, once he reached the 5th Heavenly Stage, he would not have any advantages over other people, because it was a brand new stage to him!

“Don’t think of running away!”

There was a chaotic battle going on, and Wu Yu standing on the sidelines, was noticed. A big burly servant who was one head taller than Wu Yu sprinted towards him, like an ox on two legs, his hand holding a battleaxe. He swung it fiercely at Wu Yu’s head.

Wu Yu retaliated.

“<<Pierce the Winds, Slash the Waves>>!”

This was the first style of <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>>, which was like the warm up attack of the technique. The technique had several different variations, and the image one would get upon executing it was that of a brave warrior, stepping into the ocean, breaking apart the waves and the winds in his way, in search of whales to slay.

Right now, Wu Yu’s opponent was a giant whale.

Clang!

A huge noise resounded.

Wu Yu’s hands and eyes were focused, his feet nimble, and he accurately hit the weak spot of the battleaxe, causing it to fly out of the burly servant’s hands. Even though the burly servant seemed tall and powerful, Wu Yu was shown to be the stronger of the two.

Pa!

Wu Yu dished out a sweep kick, dropping the servant, then crashed into him, causing him to fly off the podium and drop into the pit with a plunk.

“Wu Yu.”

In the sky, seated upon Celestial Cranes, the faces of Situ Jin and his cronies drained of colour.

“Look at how easily he defeated a 6th Heavenly Stage expert! It seems like this Wu Yu is now as powerful as we are!” Huaqian You bit her soft red lips, and her delicate body frame trembled, obviously uncomfortable when faced with the facts in front of her.

“That’s all fluff. If he encountered me, I could kill him in 2 or 3 attacks.” Situ Jin did not want to look cowardly in front of such a beauty.

Of course, Sun Wudao had also seen the unbelievable scene take place. He had spent a lot of effort trying locate Wu Yu in the chaotic battlefield, and upon seeing Wu Yu’s clean win against his opponent, he really wanted to jump onto the podium and fight alongside him.

“Powerful!”

The servants of Yan Li Mountain next to Sun Wudao were also sighing.

After defeating three more idiotic (because they did not see how easily he dispatched the burly servant) participators, the servants eyeing Wu Yu finally acknowledged his strength, and did not to provoke him further. Wu Yu was happy about that, because he could idle about! At that moment, something big happened at the center of the podium.

“Zhao Danlong has snatched the Celestial Ball!”

“But, there are many people who’re surrounding and closing in on him.”

It was quite obvious that Zhao Danlong had a lot of confidence in himself, but this was a battlefield with 100 people on it. Maybe he could fight off 10 people,

but how about the rest of the group?

Wu Yu could see that Zhao Danlong was currently in quite a pickle. He had pulled out all the stops, trying to hold onto the ball by intimidating, threatening, and greatly injuring his opponents. He managed to hold onto the ball for 20 breaths, eliminating more than 10 people. Unfortunately, Ju Huo launched a sneak attack, causing him to lose the ball and nearly fall off the podium.

*Currently, Zhao Danlong was drenched in blood from head to toe, staggering towards the edge of the podium to hide. Seeing the condition he was in, some people wanted to eliminate him from the competition by knocking him off the podium when he looked at his weakest. But a **lean camel is still bigger than a horse** (means that a greatly injured Zhao was still dangerous in this context). Even though Zhao was greatly injured and did not have the strength to snatch the Celestial Ball anymore, he still had the power and strength to remain on the podium.*

“Wu Yu.”

Zhao Danlong noticed Wu Yu, who wasn't quite far away from where he was standing.

“You petty little man; do you only know how to hide in the shadows?” Zhao smiled coldly.

“A battle is not all about charging in without a second thought. Winning is everything, and nobody cares by what means.” Wu Yu replied calmly.

That was his motto back when he was still a general in East Yue Wu.

If he had to attack, then he'd attack when the best opportunity presented itself to him.

“Coward!”

Zhao Danlong clenched his teeth.

Wu Yu did not bother replying.

The melee was quite fierce and violent; people were frequently dropping out, and the number of people still able to put up a fight decreased as time passed. Of course, the rate that people dropped out started to decrease as the battle

reached its climax.

Currently, the person being mobbed was Ju Huo, who had the Celestial Ball in his hand.

His footwork technique was very intricate and profound, allowing him to stroll around the battlefield. Around 40 servants were behind his back chasing after him, which was less than the number of servants chasing Zhao Danlong before.

45 breaths!

Ju Huo had already endured for 45 breaths!

After 15 more breaths, the Qi Condensing Pill and the Daemon Suppressing Sword would be his!

Qing Mang had already waited for this moment for a long time. Nobody could deny that the three 7th Heavenly Stage experts were the strongest out of the lot.

“Qing Mang, don’t you dare snatch the ball from me!” Ju Huo eyed her.

Qing Mang did not say anything in response, but continued to hide within the crowd. Ju Huo only had to protect the ball for a bit more and he’d win the event, but it was a pity that there were just too many people pursuing him. He only had one hand to defend with because he had to hold the Celestial Ball, and the Celestial Ball weighed an incredible 1000 jin.

Shua!

An azure sword light brushed past, opening several wounds on Ju Huo’s body. His arm had been struck particularly heavily as well, causing him to follow in Zhao Danlong’s footsteps.

“Haha! Nobody’s going to get the Celestial Ball!” Zhao Danlong could not help but laugh maniacally. It was as he said – there were many entrance exams in the past where nobody had managed to obtain and keep hold of the Celestial Ball for more than 60 seconds.

“Qing Mang has a chance?” Woodsong smiled. Qing Mang was the little sister of one of his apprentices, so if her future was going to be good and bright, he could bask in her success.

“Maybe not.” Su Yanli pointed at the currently uninjured Wu Yu.

“This boy has a lot of surprising abilities and has great patience, but there are currently 60 people still left on the podium. Half of them do not care about obtaining the Celestial Ball, but the rest of the servants are competing for it. The odds to succeed have certainly increased, but Wu Yu’s current power cannot compare with a 7th Heavenly Stage expert. His Martial Techniques are not profound and strong enough. Qing Mang is stronger than him in all these aspects, so I think his chances are quite low to be honest.” Woodsong analyzed.

What he said was right. Wu Yu had only reached the 4th Heavenly Stage, so he could not best Qing Mang in a direct fight.

“He wants to get the Celestial Ball, haha! If he actually manages to do it, I’ll eat Lin Er’s shit!” Situ Jin had been so infuriated by recent events that he could not control himself from speaking in such a vulgar manner.

“Situ Jin, you...” Huaqian You could not believe that Situ Jin, with his background, would speak so vulgarly.

“Qian You, I’m so sorry. I’m just very disheartened by today’s events.” Situ Jin hurriedly explained. Having to apologise dragged him into an even worse mood.

Qing Mang was quite smart. After wounding Ju Huo, she did not immediately dive in and snatch the ball, but retreated and let the rest of the servants fight over it. That would help decrease the number of competitors.

None of the servants that obtained the ball after that managed to hold on to it for more than 10 breaths. Before long, the number of people still left on the podium was getting closer to 30, and many servants had decided to give up on trying to obtain the Celestial Ball. After all, nobody wanted to risk not passing the exam to get the celestial ball!

“Wu Yu, do you want to snatch the Celestial Ball?” Qing Mang raised her head to stare at Wu Yu, who was much taller than her. Ju Huo and Zhao Danlong were both heavily injured, so she believed that Wu Yu was her only opponent left.

“Of course.” Wu Yu replied, grasping hold of his sword and rushing into battle with a few long strides.

A good opportunity had finally presented itself.

Qing Mang did not say anything more, rushing into the crowd with her footwork technique <<A Little Bit of Azure Radiance>>. A few sword shadows flitted by, and the Celestial Ball fell into her hands.

“If the 10 of you still want to snatch the ball from me, don’t blame me for being discourteous!” The little girl widened her eyes, scaring away the 15 or so servants that wanted to compete for the ball. There were around 40 people left on the podium, and only 15 out of the 40 still had the desire to snatch away the Celestial Ball. Even if they united to gang upon Qing Mang, their chances of success were still extremely low, so they decided to give up.

“Wu Yu, your turn.”

Qing Mang held the Celestial Ball in one hand, and pointed her shining azure longsword at Wu Yu.

At that moment, all eyes were focused on the two, waiting for the final confrontation to happen.

One was the young man who was placed first in the Celestial Ascendance Road event, and the other was the person who was generally acknowledged as the servant with the most latent talent!

Wu Yu, in all his life, did not expect his final opponent to be her. Even though Qing Mang was small and young, she was smarter than Ju Huo and Zhao Danlong, managing to wait until now to attack and scare away the remaining servants.

Her knowledge regarding human nature and the battlefield was not bad for her age.

But Wu Yu was not going to give up on the Celestial Ball, and right now, he was the only person who held a small chance to face off against Qing Mang.

He obviously could not win against a 7th Heavenly Stage expert in a direct confrontation, but Wu Yu’s advantage against Qing Mang was that he did not

have to use a hand to hold the Celestial Ball. This meant that Qing Mang only had one hand free to face him, and she would not be in her best battle state because the ball weighed 1000 jin. This was something her little, delicate body could not entirely cope with.

“Haha, this is going to be spectacular!” Woodsong stroked his beard whilst laughing. “I’ll place my bet on Qing Mang.”

“Wood Elder you bully! But Wu Yu is one of my servants, so I’ll place my bet on Wu Yu.” Su Yanli lifted her veil to reveal her eyes, gazing intently at the young man who was taking his first steps into the Dao of Celestials.

Chapter 14: Slaying Whales in the East Sea

Finally! The end of the Entrance Exam!

Edited by: Kradok

But, it was only the beginning.

“<<Giant Whale Leaps Out of the East Sea>>!”

The air emanated from Wu Yu’s sword and motions changed.

His longsword roared and trembled with anger! The azure cloud in front of Wu Yu was the East Sea, and the sword in his hand was a giant whale of the deep sea. His body tensed with power, and like a giant whale leaping out from the depths of the ocean, Wu Yu’s sword tore apart the azure cloud in front of him, instantly lunging right in front of Qing Mang’s eyes.

Whoosh!

Sadly, the lunge did not injure Qing Mang. She moved with intricate footwork to evade the attack right in the nick of time.

However, Wu Yu’s longsword managed to cut off three strands of her hair, which were caught by the breeze and floated past his face.

Qing Mang was only 13 years old, but her face was delicate, dainty and saintlike. Her air was unique and distinct. Wu Yu estimated that within a few years, she would become a beauty that could rival Su Yanli.

However, <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>> was a very profound technique; the attacks resembled the waves of the sea, slamming into Qing Mang wave after wave, and each wave was stronger than the previous one!

“<<Sweeping Across the Sea>>!”

Wu Yu took hold of this good opportunity to press forward. The prizes from the Sect were right within view, so he didn’t care if his opponent was a little girl. His sword slashed horizontally, transforming into endless waves, so mighty that

the Heavens shook in fear. Under Wu Yu's hands, <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>> finally regained its lost glory.

Under Wu Yu's ferocious attacks, Qing Mang could only execute <<A Little Bit of Azure Radiance>> to retreat.

Wu Yu's mighty attack stunned the spectators in their seat. That dominating, overbearing air his slash released gave the impression that Wu Yu could rival an army with tens of thousands of people in power!

Even with its power, <<Sweeping Across the Sea>> was only a supporting attack!

The essence of <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea Sword Technique>> was all in its final style. Back when Wu Yu was still in the capital city, he could not fully display the essence of the final style. Now, under the blazing sun, he felt he could do it! All the despair and melancholy he had felt when he was exiled and crippled were all released in this one attack!

It was as if Wu Yu was in the East Sea, and a giant whale was raging in front of him. In his hand was a longsword, and with a slash, he executed <<Seeping Across the Sea>> to make the whale visible beneath the waves.

"<<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>>!"

Entering the East Sea, Slaying Giant Whales!

Wu Yu raised his sword high, like an executioner, and brought it down, fast and violently.

The endless East Sea was split into half by one sword!

Danger descended from above at Qing Mang.

"Very strong!"

The calm of Qing Mang's face quickly vanished, and she hurriedly executed <<Solitary Mountain Sword Shadows>> to block the incoming attack. But it was too late; Wu Yu's attack slashed apart her attempt at a defence, continuing down towards her head.

Qing Mang retreated a few steps, about to counterattack, before one foot stepped off into thin air.

“Shit, I forgot this was the Celestial Ascendance Podium!”

Her face drained of colour.

Even if one foot stepped into thin air, she wouldn't lose her balance as she was a 7th Heavenly Stage expert. The problem was Wu Yu's sword was about to strike her face! If she didn't retreat, she would be hit by the sword, which would mean death, as the sword was too domineering and overbearing.

However, if she retreated, she would fall off the podium! Don't even talk about getting the Celestial Ball; she would be eliminated from the exam, which meant she wouldn't be able to enter the Sect! Even though Qing Mang was still young and still had another chance to enter the Sect, her current status as a servant was dragging her down.

Qing Mang decided to resist elimination with her sword.

Clang!

The expected end result did not change. Wu Yu's whale slaying attack broke open her defences, creating a powerful shockwave that rocked Qing Mang backwards along with the Celestial Ball. Both her feet touched nothing but thin air, and without solid ground to borrow power from, there was nothing she could do but fall.

Whoosh!

All the spectators were shocked at the result!

However, right at that moment, Wu Yu did something very unexpected. With nimble hands, he deftly caught hold of Qing Mang's shirtsleeve, before pulling and throwing her back onto the stage lightly.

Wu Yu did this because he thought Qing Mang should enter the Sect and also because he didn't win properly. After all, he only managed to force her off the stage, and she was carrying the Celestial Ball, which weighed 1000 jin, at the same time.

Qing Mang was stunned by the turn of events. Wasn't she about to be eliminated from the exam? Wasn't she supposed to be knocked off the podium?

Everyone was immersed in surprise and shock.

“Again,” stated Wu Yu, preparing to attack.

At that moment, Qing Mang suddenly threw the Celestial Ball over, and said “You won, so there’s no point in continuing.”

Wu Yu caught hold of the ball. He did not expect that Qing Mang, at her age, would have such principles. If you lose, you lose, no point in excuse. It was true that she should’ve been knocked off the stage and eliminated, and that the Celestial Ball should’ve been “rethrown” for the remaining competitors to fight over.

Qing Mang did not attack, but instead showed her gratitude to Wu Yu for pulling her back onto the podium and giving her the opportunity to enter the Sect once again. The Celestial Ball was precious, but to her, status meant more.

Zhao Danlong, Ju Huo and the rest did not have the strength left to fight over the Celestial Ball, and Qing Mang did not want it. In the end, the ball fell into Wu Yu’s hands.

Of course, that didn’t mean he was stronger than Qing Mang.

However, that final attack of his was definitely very spectacular and amazing. Out of all the participators, people estimated that only the three 7th Heavenly Stage experts could block it, albeit at a certain cost.

What came next was “cleaning time”. Even though Wu Yu had the Celestial Ball, nobody dared to snatch it from him, because the final attack of his was too powerful.

The entire mountain erupted with noise and discussion after witnessing Wu Yu’s all-powerful strike.

“Wu Yu, he’s so strong!”

“He was able to make Qing Mang retreat! Even though she was dragged down by the Celestial Ball, being able to achieve such a feat is no easy task!”

“If the Celestial Ball remains in his hand in the end, then it’s well deserved.”

Many people were cheering for Wu Yu!

“Qing Mang that little girl... she just has too much backbone!” Woodsong smiled helplessly.

“Wood Elder, I’ve won!” Su Yanli’s face blossomed into an incredibly intoxicating smile.

“It hasn’t ended yet...” As Woodsong finished speaking, 60 breaths passed, and the Host of the event announced that Wu Yu had won the “Celestial Ball Plundering” event as well as become the champion of this year’s entrance exam.

The first one out of the Celestial Ascendance Road.

The person who won the Celestial Ball Plundering event.

After Wu Yu heard the announcement, he also found everything a little bit hard to believe. He only wanted to enter the Sect, but not only did he become the champion, he also won two fabulous prizes!

He wasn’t the strongest, but he was the victor!

“Wu Yu! Wu Yu!”

The ten thousand servants present all shouted Wu Yu’s name, because at that moment, he was their hero!

He was their dream!

“Qi Condensing Pill, Daemon Suppressing Sword!”

To Wu Yu, even the Wu Yu of three years past, such treasures were something he’d never thought he’d be able to obtain.

“Congratulations.” Qing Mang murmured. Even though she wasn’t all that happy with the results, she still came over and said a few words of felicitation.

“If you don’t mind that I’m older than you by a few years, we can become friends.” Wu Yu smiled. Everything was like a dream – never did he expect that he would stand on the podium a winner, with ten thousand people cheering his name!

The battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium had finally ended!

“Sun Wudao, Wu Yu has become the champion! He’s entered the Sect and has been given big treasures!” A servant spoke loudly beside Sun Wudao’s ear.

“Ohhh....” Sun Wudao was still in shock over the turn of events.

“Wu Yu has ascended and become a Celestial!” Another servant shouted.

“Become a Celestial...” Sun Wudao stood up whilst trembling, eyes filled to the brim with hot tears.

“No regrets! My life has no more regrets!” He cried at the empty Celestial Ascendance Podium.

In the sky.

“Situ Jin...” Huaqian You’s face drained of colour upon seeing Situ Jin shake with anger, though a little sympathy could be seen within her eyes.

By his side, Wang Yiyang opened his mouth, then closed it again, obviously unable to muster up the courage to speak.

Liu Muxue’s turned her head to look at Wu Yu, “Incredible. I think I feel a little bit attracted towards him now.”

Wang Yiyang smiled coldly “He only a petty little man who knows how to stage a comeback... your sense of aesthetics is so unique.”

Liu Muxue put her hand over her mouth and laughed, “I’m just joking. Wang Yiyang, are you scared of him?”

Only Situ Jin did not say anything.

He felt as if somebody had slapped his face a few times and had humiliated his dignity. The anger and frustration he felt was pent up inside him, without a way to vent it.

“You thirty, from today onwards, are official disciples of my Sword to Heaven Sect! Come with me.” In front of Wu Yu and the 29 other lucky servants was the stern Daoist Arts Keeper Elder!

It seemed that Su Yanli had left already.

“Elder, can you wait for me for a moment.” Wu Yu asked.

“Why?” Because Wu Yu’s performance was dazzling today, and because Su Yanli supported him, Woodsong naturally would take everything he said in consideration.

“Before the start of the entrance exam, I piggybacked an old servant from Yan Li Mountain to spectate the event. I want to find somebody to take him back

home.”

All the servants were already leaving, but Sun Wudao was still sat in his spectating spot. Wu Yu still had to listen to what Woodsong had to say and complete some ceremonies, so he didn't want Sun to sit in the blazing sun for too long and wait for him to pick him up.

“Yes.”

Woodsong replied indifferently.

“Thank you Elder!”

After bowing, Wu Yu sprinted through the crowd, arriving in front of Sun Wudao who was waiting for him with the blink of an eye.

“You've done well!” Sun slapped him hard on the back.

Wu Yu looked at Sun and saw the joy and happiness that he'd expected Sun to feel. His face radiated with a healthy sheen, making him look tens of years younger.

“Wu Yu, no, Wu Shangxian, the Daoist Arts Keeper Elder is waiting for you. Don't worry, we'll definitely take him safely home to Yan Li Mountain!” A few servants from Yan Li Mountain started to ingratiate themselves with him.

It just so happens that Wu Yu needed their help!

“Wu Yu, go! Don't miss such an opportunity! It's fine, I can go home with them.” Sun Wudao said.

“Yes, Wu Shangxian! From now on, our band of brothers will work for you! We swear we'll serve Sun well, so don't worry and focus on being a Shangxian!”

The servants weren't young, so they were quite adept at “manipulating” human nature.

Woodsong and the rest wouldn't wait for too long, so Wu Yu hurriedly nodded his head and exchanged a few words with Sun. He then turned around and sprinted back to Woodsong's side before Woodsong lead the group away.

“Let's go back.”

The group of servants brought Sun Wudao with them, crossing ridges and

mountains. They were all in a joyous mood, singing rowdy songs along the way.

“Yi Ya Wei, Yi Ya Wei, Wu Yu, who came from Yan Li Mountain, braved the Celestial Ascendance Road and snatched the Celestial Ball!”

Songs popped out one after another in their journey home.

Atop of their heads, a group of Celestial Cranes flew past.

“Situ Jin, look down.” Hua Qianyou said suddenly.

“What?” Situ Jin replied impatiently.

He looked downwards to find a group of servants and an old man, all happy and singing joyous songs.

“It’s that old fellow.” Wang Yiyang smiled coldly.

“Wu Yu, what a good chap! So generous too! He destroyed Zhao Danlong, fought back Ju Huo, defeated Qing Mang! Soon he’ll fight Situ Jin once again and destroy him so bad he’ll piss and shit his pants!”

“Piss and shit his pants, yeah piss and shit his pants!”

The servants created their own lyrics whilst walking, singing merrily without a care in the world.

Chapter 15: I Swear I'm Not Human

Special announcement coming soon!

Edited by: Kradok

Heaven Gazing Mountain.

This was the place where Wu Yu would live and cultivate after becoming an Outer Disciple.

The Blue Surge Mountain Range was vast and endless, so each Core Disciple could have a mountain and the resources in it to themselves.

Heaven Gazing Mountain already had 50 disciples living in it before the entrance exams, so now that there were 30 new disciples initiated into the sect, the mountain was fully occupied.

Built on the enormous mountain, from its waist to its peak, and the several shorter and smaller mountains beside it, were numerous palaces, all enshrouded in mist. Each disciple had their own palace, which provided them with a place to live in, cultivate in, meet with friends... it even provided them with a garden in which they could grow Celestial Plants! They were so beautiful that even Wu Yu's old palace in East Yue Wu could not compare with them.

Apart from that, Heaven Gazing Mountain also had countless markets and towers filled with scriptures of Martial Arts. It also featured many meeting spots for disciples, so in many cases, disciples living in the same mountain were like family to each other.

Wu Yu, Qing Mang, Zhao Danlong, Ju Huo and the rest of the new disciples would live in Heaven Gazing Mountain for the foreseeable future, unless they reached the Qi Condensing Phase and became a Core Disciple.

Woodsong brought the troop of new disciples towards Heaven Gazing Mountain's "Heaven Gazing Podium", which was the highest place of the peak,

above the clouds. Surrounding the podium was an ocean of clouds, each in their own little cluster, floating above the earth.

“From today onwards, the 30 of you will be official disciples of my Sword to Heaven Sect. As long as you’re alive, you’ll always be a disciple of the Sect, and even in death, you’ll remain a disciple of the Sect!”

“Heaven has given the duty of slaying daemons and demons to us Sword Cultivators!”

The Daoist Arts Keeper Elder started reciting the Sect’s laws and regulation. After listening in for a while, Wu Yu learned that the Sect had five taboos and ten commandments, as well as numerous detailed and complicated rules.

“When you go back, read through and memorise this book – <<An Introduction to Sword Cultivation>>. If you disobey this order, you will receive devastating punishments. Confinement in jail is usually what takes place, but expulsion from the Sect or execution can happen.”

“This book is called <<An Introduction to the Blue Surge Mountain Range>>. It details the rules of the Celestial Sect, which you’ll have to memorise, such as where you’re allowed to go and where you’re forbidden to go (with your current status as Outer Disciples). If you wander into areas forbidden to you, you’ll receive serious sanctions.”

“This is the <<Atlas of the Dongsheng God Continent>>, which you’ll also have to read through and memorise. It contains information on the different powers in the continent as well as the lands they inhabit, such as other Celestial Sects. You’ll also learn about daemons and demons in the book, which will help you immensely in your journeys and adventures outside of the Sect.”

Woodsong also gave out two more books, one holding a Martial Art, the other a Sword Technique. They were both Middle Class Martial Techniques, which weren’t of much use to Wu Yu.

“Outer Disciples will receive one blade of “Flying Celestial Grass” and a runesheet of their choice every month; the managers of Heaven Gazing Mountain will help you acquire them. However, this is the limit to how much the Sect can help you for free with cultivational resources, because how far you may go on the path of cultivation depends on your efforts.”

“Everything I’ve said today is recorded in the rulebook, so if you forgot anything I’ve said, read it. I’ve got one last word of advice for you lot. You 30 have ascended and are now real disciples of a Celestial Sect, so the most important thing for you to do is to cultivate – don’t let your desire for revenge or emotions cloud your mind. The greatest goal you all should be working towards is to reach the stage of Perfect Martial Arts and ascend into the Dao of Cultivation. Only when you do so will you be considered a true cultivator! The 30 of you are still far off from understanding the meaning of cultivation and becoming true cultivators!”

“However, condensing your Qi and stepping onto the road of cultivation is easier said than done. In 100 Outer Disciples, only 1 will be successful in doing so, which means out of the 30 of you, there is a high possibility that nobody will be able to become a real cultivator! Don’t be prideful because you’ve become the disciples of a Celestial Sects, because your journey in the world of cultivation has only just begun!”

His speech instantly calmed down the excited, beating hearts of the 30 new initiates, because it showed them the difficulties in the path of cultivation.

“There are 53 palaces in Heaven Gazing Mountain that are empty. Please pick one that suits you and move in. Wu Yu, come here.”

After hearing what Woodsong said, the group of disciples could not wait. Back when they were still servants, one of their dreams was to own and live in a Celestial Palace, yet today, this dream will finally become reality!”

However, hearing Wu Yu’s name being called led them to think of the Qi Condensing Pill and the Daemon Suppressing Sword.

Owning those two treasures were also the dreams of many of the servants.

In normal situations, only people who’d reached the stage of Perfect Martial Arts could own these items.

Woodsong did not say any unnecessary words, walking to Wu Yu, and taking out a jade case out of nowhere. Even though it was closed very tightly, a sweet fragrance still emitted from inside the case.

“This is the Qi Condensing Pill. It won’t help you now with your current

cultivational status, so wait until you've reached the stage of Perfect Martial Arts before opening the case."

"Yes."

Wu Yu took the jade case from Woodsong's hands. The Qi Condensing Pill was a top notch and extremely rare treasure, but currently, it was not of much use to Wu Yu.

After that, a whoosh came from Woodsong's hand, and a sword appeared out from nowhere. Just from its appearance, the desire for blood released from the sword forced all the disciples back a few steps. It was three fingers wide, with a blade as bright as snow, so sharp that even fur could be cut in half. Engraved on the side of the blade was a landscape, featuring different types and species of daemons.

And on the sword hilt, there were two awe inspiring words – “镇妖”!

The Daemon Suppressing Sword was also a very famous sword outside of the Sect. Even Wu Yu had heard of it back in the days he was still a Prince Heir, though he didn't know it came from the Sword to Heaven Sect. To him back then, the Daemon Suppressing Sword was the most powerful weapon in the world!

Never in his life did he dream he would obtain it like this.

"Treat it well."

After saying that, the Daoist Arts Keeper Elder took his leave.

All the servants looked at Wu Yu with envy.

"Let's go, my brothers and sisters. From now on, you guys will be a member of our family here on Heaven Gazing Mountain, so let me take you guys to select your own palace!"

A middle-aged man walked towards them.

Following the middle-aged man, Wu Yu selected a palace on the waist of the mountain.

"Wu Yu, are we friends?" Qing Mang raised her head and asked him.

“Of course.”

“Then every now and then I’ll find you to play and fight.” With that, she skipped away, her face blooming with a big, wide smile. It seems like this mature and cold girl was still a child at heart.

Everything was brand new to the 30 new initiates. They were given almost everything they needed for their life as real disciples of the Sect; only choosing their servants remained. Outer Disciples were given ten servants to serve them.

“I’m going to go back to Yan Li Mountain and ask Su Yanli to let Uncle Sun enjoy his last years here with me. After that, I’m going to go recruit some servants to work for me.”

The older generation of disciples would bring some servants from outside for the Outer Disciples to select from every day; it seemed it was going to take place by the mountain gate today.

Therefore, Wu Yu sped off to Yan Li Mountain after unloading his belongings in his palace.

There was a tall and handsome Celestial Crane waiting for him inside the stables of the palace. It was a gift to him from the Sect, so getting from place to place inside the Blue Surge Mountain’s was going to be much easier.

Situ Jin and his Lin Er, or Mei Er was just like Wu Yu’s Celestial Crane, a gift from the Sect.

Wu Yu clambered onto the Crane and soared into the sky, braving the buffeting winds, hair swaying in the breeze. The vast world of the Celestial Sect lay before his very eyes, grand and beautiful. Ah... being a servant disciple and being an Outer Disciple just does not feel the same...

.....

In accordance with the rules, Wu Yu had to park his Celestial Crane inside Su Yanli’s Celestial Beast Gardens. As he’d become an Outer Disciple, he was no longer in a master – servant relationship with Su Yanli.

“Descend.”

Celestial Cranes were Spiritual Beasts, so even though they couldn’t speak,

they could understand human speech. With a loud cry, it descended within the Celestial Beast Gardens, notifying the servants that a visitor had arrived at Yan Li Mountain. A servant rushed over to service the Crane, but surprisingly, he was not smiling, but pale and nervous “Wu, Wu Yu, something bad happened.”

Something bad happened!

Wu Yu was startled.

The servant pointed at the wooden house by the mountain with trembling fingers.

Instantly, Wu Yu had a sense of foreboding. Did Sun Wudao slip or trip over in his journey back to Yan Li Mountain?

Whoosh!

He sped over to the house at his fastest speed, face drained of colour, heart beating with anxiety, muttering “please, don’t let anything bad happen to him!” over and over again under his breath.

He was now very close to the wooden house.

Whoosh! He was there!

The door wasn’t closed, so Wu Yu could see a group of servants inside. They were the ones who’d vowed to bring Sun Wudao back home safely.

Their faces were pale, and their bodies were trembling.

Wu Yu stood there, mind blank and empty, as if struck by lightning

Inside the house, there was a bed, and on the bed was a skinny old man. His eyes were closed, already empty of vitality and life.

Boom!

Wu Yu’s blood thrashed within his arteries and veins, striking his brain with crazed fervor. Veins crisscrossed his eyes, and the world in front of him was painted in red.

Sun Wudao was dead.

“You guys!”

Wu Yu wanted to tear the servants in front of him into little pieces

But he looked back, to see that two of them were sat on the floor, mouth dripping fresh blood, eyes wide, mouth emitting strange noises, trying to communicate with him. Upon close inspection, WU Yu noticed that their tongues had been torn off.

“Wu, Wu Shangxian, don’t.... don’t blame us, it was Situ Jin! On our journey back we encountered Situ Jin and his three friends! They were the ones who murdered Sun Wudao!”

Hua La!

The remaining few servants all collapsed and kneeled on the floor.

“Kolanta and Qing Feng tried to say a few words and stop them, so because of that, their tongues were torn off!”

“We’re too weak, so no matter how much and how hard we tried, we could not stop Situ Jin from killing Sun Wudao!”

The servants told Wu Yu whilst crying in hysteria.

Situ Jin!

Wu Yu’s eyes blazed red, and anger threatened to erupt from his chest like a volcano.

Sun Wudao was the person Wu Yu respected most in his lifetime. All the hard work he’d did in the past month was to make him happy and feel satisfied, but now that he’d become an Outer Disciple and was about to soar into the sky, Situ Jin killed Sun!

He killed a defenseless, and already dying old man!

Poor Wu Yu, who wanted to take Sun Wudao to Heaven Gazing Mountain so that he could live out the rest of his life in peace.

“It seems like Situ Jin really detests you, killing Sun Wudao upon seeing him. He said that killing servants was nothing, just like killing an ant to Shangxian’s.”

Kolanta told Situ Jin and his friends that you were already an Outer Disciple, and was number one amongst the new initiates, but they just laughed. Not only

did they cut off his tongue, they also said that you were only a cheap, petty little man who knew how to make a comeback, and that you couldn't do anything against them even if they killed the old piece of trash."

"It seems what they said was true, because real disciples of the Sect cannot kill each other, otherwise the consequences would be devastating. That's why they're not scared of your retribution! Ah... Sun Wudao's already so old, why couldn't they just let him go...!"

The servants shaking in anger at Situ Jin and his cronies, as well as weeping tears of melancholia and helplessness.

"Sun Wudao"

Wu Yu knelt and kowtowed on the floor.

He would not forget that it was because of the legacy Sun Wudao gave him that he has everything he has today.

To him, the old man was like his father, stern and strict, but full of love towards him.

Ah... It's so unfortunate that the Heavens would not give him the chance to repay his gratitude.

He wouldn't blame himself, because the person in the wrong was not him, but Situ Jin!

The person who wanted to whip himself to death because of a Celestial Crane.

The person who wanted to make Sun Wudao to eat Crane shit for fun.

The person, no, the beast, who killed a 100 year old man because of his envy of Wu Yu.

Wu Yu kowtowed and released a roar that could tear the heavens apart. With a Ka Cha, his hands ripped the floor tiles below him into shards, and the shards in his hands were crushed into powder.

The thing he hated most was the fact that he didn't kill Situ Jin earlier.

Ooooooh!

Wu Yu stood up, radiating an intense desire for bloodshed, for vengeance!

“If I don’t kill Situ Jin today, I swear I’m not human!”

Chapter 16: The Big Battle of Heaven's Cry Peak

Sweet, sweet revenge!

p.s. read Lugal Gigam if you haven't already!

Edited by: Kradok

Wu Yu headed over to Heaven's Cry Peak aboard his Celestial Crane.

He could not forget how Sun consoled after he lost everything.

He could not forget how Sun would tell him to hurry up when he was slow or lagging behind.

He could not forget the food Sun would prepare for him at the end of each long day.

It was the feeling of family, of deep love.

The old man's wrinkle ridden face always looked stern and strict, but the love in his eyes was unmistakable. His eyes... Wu Yu could not forget those eyes full of love.

Upon remembering the proud, happy smile Sun gave when he placed first place in the entrance exam, Wu Yu felt a stabbing pain in his heart.

"Situ Jin!"

Situ Jin's arrogant, despotic face would constantly appear in his head, and he could even picture the scene of Sun's death, causing the fires of fury he was feeling to blaze stronger and higher.

One of the rules of the Sect was that disciples were not allowed to kill each other; if one had hatred against another, then he/she had to report it to the Sect.

"Heaven's Cry Peak!"

He had arrived.

His blood, flesh, bones, tendons and even his inner organs all blazed with golden fury, and veins crisscrossed his eyes. The shocking bloodlust that radiated from Wu Yu was something unprecedented!

“Situ Jin!”

Wu Yu roared angrily, voice resounding throughout the mountain.

Heaven’s Cry Peak instantly went into an uproar, because somebody had come to challenge them!

“I, Situ Jin, am here.”

A slovenly, nonchalant voice came from the peak of the mountain.

Situ Jin was on “Heaven’s Cry Podium”, the biggest square on Heaven’s Cry Mountain, where numerous disciples would duel each other every day.

Wu Yu drove his Celestial Crane over to the square. It was currently one hour past noon, so the sun was still blazing hot, searing every inch of his skin and flesh, causing golden light to wander around his body and golden flames to form within his bones.

There were quite a few disciples at “Heaven’s Cry Podium”, so they all saw a young teenage boy, who seemed to be burning in golden flames, descend from the sky. He jumped off his Celestial Crane before it landed on the ground, slamming heavily into the ground.

A few cracks instantly appeared on the giant rock that the “Heaven’s Cry Podium” was made out of!

“Who is he?!”

There were quite a few disciples around Wu Yu, and they weren’t weak, but since it was not their business, they didn’t care why Wu Yu came to the mountain.

Situ Jin, Wang Yiyang, Huaqian You and Liu Muxue emerged from a room and walked over to the “Heaven’s Cry Podium”. Even though Wu Yu was quite far away from where they were, the killing intent and savageness in his eyes shocked all of them.

“We don’t have to be scared. There’s four of us, and the Sect does not permit

slaughter between disciples, otherwise expulsion or even execution will await the one who breaks the rule. What can he do to us?” Situ Jin smiled coldly, before walking over to Wu Yu with swagger and an irritating nonchalance.

“Reportedly, this Wu Yu is a servant who has just passed the entrance exam, as you can see by the “Daemon Suppressing Sword” he’s holding in his hands. What I don’t know is, what exactly happened between him and Situ Jin and his bunch of cronies?”

“Situ Jin’s little brother is very overpowered, so Situ Jin’s status has been on the rise within the Sect, leading him to offend quite a few people.”

Not many people were willing to be friends and team up with Situ Jin because of his personality.

Wu Yu did not listen to the crowd’s discussions, because all his attention was focused on Situ Jin and his three friends. If he didn’t kill them today, he was not human.

Situ Jin was the main culprit, and his three friends were accomplices.

“Step Step!”

The sword in his hand was no longer the metal sword, but the Daemon Suppressing Sword. It’s blade reflected the piercing rays of the sun, shining with a cold, brutal light. The engravings of daemons on the sword seemed to come to life, roaring, howling, emitting an enormous desire for blood.

Wu Yu did not say anything, only walking forward and emitting an aura that seemed to strengthen in power with every step. His eyes, locked in a battle with Situ Jin’s, shined golden.

“Ah, I wondered who it was shouting my name just now. Seems like it’s just a petty little servant from Yan Li Mountain who was just initiated into the Sect today. Why are you not back at Yan Li Mountain showing off your achievements? Why are you here on Heaven’s Cry Mountain, trying to find me?”

Wang Yiyang, who was next to Situ Jin, added “There’s an 80% chance that it’s because his old-ass father has just died. Of course, hiking across mountain’s is not good for the health of the elderly, so the death of your father was quite normal. Sigh... that old shit sure lived for a long time, what a waste of food for

my Sword to Heaven Sect.”

The two beauties could not resist the mirth of their jokes, laughing whilst scolding Situ Jin and Wang Yiyang for being so rude. Their seductive bodies and enchanting curves attracted the gazes of many people.

Situ Jin’s face suddenly turned incredibly cold and savage “Wu Yu, let me tell you the truth. I killed that old fart, because I didn’t like his face. But what can you do about that? Do you dare risk your life against me? Actually, do you even have the power, the courage to do so?”

He was not scared one bit.

His three pals were right next to him, and this was the Sword to Heaven Sect. Most importantly, they were on Heaven’s Cry Peak, the largest square on the mountain, and there were 20 other disciples here watching the situation unfold! Also, more and more disciples were heading over to the podium to check out what the commotion was all about!

Furthermore, Situ Bright, his little brother who was currently 13 years of age, had reached the stage of Perfect Martial Arts, so nobody was willing to provoke or make enemies out of himself!

Otherwise, why would Wang Yiyang and the two beauties, who were extremely arrogant and snobbish, flock to his side and view him as the leader of their group?

“Haha...”

Everybody on the scene burst into laughter. Cases like these were very common, but they amounted to nothing in the end, because who would be willing to risk expulsion or execution when they’d worked so hard to enter the Celestial Sect?

“Sigh... what a pitiful guy, to make enemies with Situ Jin and his crew right after his initiation into the sect.”

“The existence of Situ Jin’s overpowered little brother deters anyone from making enemies out of him.”

“This Wu Yu is such a brainless idiot, challenging Situ Jin’s authority on

Heaven's Cry Mountain all by himself.”

The disciples on the sidelines burst into laughter again, and Situ Jin laughed even harder, wrapping his hands around Huaqian You's waist, staring at Wu Yu with a mocking smile.

Whoosh!

Wu Yu ignored their repetitive warnings, actually increasing his speed and rushing at Situ Jin like an arrow from a bow.

Situ Jin's confident and mocking expression crumbled.

“Don't you guys dare step into this fight. It's between me and him.”

He let go of Huaqian You, his face now savage and vicious, before drawing his sword. His sword was not on par with the Daemon Suppressing Sword in quality, but its blade gleamed with a cruel light. Situ attacked with his sword, executing the Situ Family's Middle Class Martial Technique <<Cold Murdering Sword>>.

“You piece of trash, eat my <<Cold Heaven & Earth>>!” Situ Jin was arrogant, so he expected to end the battle in one attack.

“<<Pierce the Winds, Slash the Waves>>!”

Upon reaching Situ Jin, Wu Yu instantly erupted, fusing with the sun high above in the sky, shining bright and blindingly. He lifted his sword with both hands, then swung it down mightily with more power than that of a giant Beast weighing over 10,000 jin!

Tear!

“Ah!”

Wu Yu's swing of anger clashed with Situ Jin's frosty blade. Situ Jin's sword was reportedly a blade modified by a Celestial, but it shattered under the frenzied attacks of the Daemon Suppressing Sword.

Ding Ding Ding!

Numerous sword shards embedded themselves into Situ Jin's flesh. One, especially, flew into his mouth, slicing open a wound that leaked hot blood.

Tear!

The Daemon Suppressing Sword was knocked slightly off course, so it was unable to slice Situ Jin in half, but it managed to take off an arm, leading it to fly off and causing blood to spurt out, boiling under the heat of the noonday sun.

Boom!

The end result of their first clash shocked all the spectators. Those who were mocking and jeering at Wu Yu instantly shut up.

Situ Jin rolled on the floor into a ball, screaming like a maniac, completely different from the person he was just now.

Defeated and nearly killed with one attack!

Wu Yu was like a Demon God, his eyes cold and merciless, stabbing at Situ Jin's heart to end everything once and for all.

"Situ Jin!"

"Stop!"

No one expected that Wu Yu would have the courage to kill Situ Jin, all for an already dead servant!

Wang Yiyang and the rest of Situ Jin's cronies were currently in a state of confusion. Wu Yu's anger was beyond their imagination, so they could only hastily rush up and block Wu Yu's advance, allowing time for Situ Jin to escape. Situ Jin, given a respite from further attacks, crawled out of the vicinity of the battle whilst screaming in pain, creating a path of blood on the floor.

"Tell big brother to come! Tell big brother to come! Ahhhhh!" Situ Jin fell into a mad craze from the pain of losing his arm, eyes red and bloodshot.

Situ Jin was with his big brother, Situ Kang, before coming over to the podium, so he thought that Wang Yiyang and his other followers would be able to hold out until his brother arrived.

A surprised shout.

"Pa!"

Somebody covered in blood was sent flying next to Situ Jin, causing him to shiver in surprise and terror.

“Liu Muxue!”

The tall, elegant body by his side was Liu Muxue. A moment ago, Situ was one of her admirers and suitors, doing everything he could to get her in bed with him. But now, there was a hole through her chest, pierced through by Wu Yu’s sword, splattering her whole body with blood. Her pair of lifeless eyes stared at the sky.

She died with her eyes open!

“Somebody’s dead!”

The whole mountain erupted into clamour.

Normal grudge fights and dead people were two completely different things! Nobody could ever put them together side by side! However, Wu Yu’s actions had broken this illusion.

Wu Yu had caused too big of a commotion. Sooner or later, everybody would know what had happened on Heaven’s Cry Peak! And by everybody, this meant servants, Outer Disciples, Core Disciples and even Elders!

Everybody drew a big breath!

Maybe it was because Situ Jin’s personality and character was too detestable, but the 20 other disciples nearby did not come forward to help him.

In actuality, it was because Wu Yu currently looked like a killing machine, so nobody was willing to stand in his way, even if they a stage higher than him. Furthermore, nobody knew what other things Wu Yu had up his sleeve, so it certainly not worth it to risk their lives for Situ Jin and participate in such a bloody fight.

Pa!

As Situ Jin was looking at Liu Muxue’s corpse while shivering, another person was sent flying in his direction, slamming into him. Situ Jin pushed the person off with one hand, causing the person’s body to thunk onto the ground. Like Liu Muxue, the person’s eyes were wide open, but instead of staring at the sky, they were staring at Situ Jin.

“Huaqian You!”

This beauty, who he'd almost played into his hands, was also killed by Wu Yu.

The seductive and alluring aura she had in life gradually faded away, and her body started to cool. No longer did she attract Situ Jin – her body only terrified him.

“Ughh....” Situ Jin forgot about the pain that was wracking him, because terror and fear had invaded his mind. The thing was, even if he regretted his actions, nothing was going to change, because what was done was done.

“Situ Jin, I hate you!”

Wang Yiyang, the last one standing out of the four, finally staggered and collapsed next to Situ Jin, giving him a look of immense hatred before letting his last breath wheeze through his lips.

Wu Yu had killed three people! One after another!

Weng!

Situ Jin, in his current mad state, could still make out Wu Yu and his bloodstained sword clearly. Wu Yu's body blazed with a golden fire, and his eyes shined with a golden light, causing Situ Jin's mind to crack.

Something big had happened again!

Everyone watching drew a deep breath.

“Your turn.” Wu Yu slowly walked over to Situ Jin. In actuality, Situ Jin was quite lucky, because he wasn't the first one to die!

In another sense, he was quite unlucky, as he had to see his friends die!

The pain and the terror that Situ Jin was currently feeling was unimaginable. Upon seeing Wu Yu walk in his direction, Situ scrambled backwards in a panic. He also lost control of his bladder, causing him to pee his pants.

“You looking to die?”

Suddenly a roar could be heard, and a gleaming blade arced to meet Wu Yu's sword, which was about to run Situ Jin through the heart. The crowd could not help but lament that Situ Jin was too lucky, as he was saved again.

Situ Kang was bingeing on alcohol and fooling around with Situ Jin and his

friends before Situ Jin said they needed to go out to deal with a little problem. Never in his life did he expect that in a moment's time three of them would be dead, and Situ Jin would be heavily wounded.

The person who'd blocked Wu Yu's sword was a tall man who resembled Situ Jin. However, he did not emit arrogance, but coldness and introvertedness. He wore rough armour that made him look like a general.

"Brother, kill him! Destroy him! Ahhhhhh!" Situ Jin screamed. His brother was a 7th Heavenly Stage Expert and an avid cultivator, so he was ten times stronger than him.

The official name for the 7th Heavenly Stage was called the "Mind Condensing" Stage, which meant the area of refinement and strengthening was the brain. Completing this step would make a cultivator's understanding of Martial Arts and the Dao of Celestialism to grow by significantly. In normal situations people who'd reached the 7th Heavenly Stage were infinitely stronger than those who'd only just reached the 6th Heavenly Stage!

"You have committed a grave crime by killing your fellow disciples. Allow me to take the place of the Celestial Sect and sentence you to death!" Situ Kang drew out a wide broadsword from his scabbard, which was both sharp and overbearing. This sword was closer in quality to the Daemon Suppressing Sword in comparison with Situ Jin's sword.

Wu Yu was somebody who could clearly distinguish who he had grudges against and who he had not, so he said "There are no grudges between you and me, so stand to one side. I don't want to kill you."

Situ Kang smiled coldly "You're wrong. It's not that you don't want to kill me – it's that I want to kill you!"

His little brother had an arm cut off, and the three of his little brother's companions had been killed, so how could he not fall into a rage? Moreover, he now had an excuse to kill Wu Yu, so the top brass could blame him for killing a fellow disciple.

The main culprit, Situ Jin, had not died yet. Even though his arm had been cut off, if he was given sufficient resources, he could still cultivate.

If Wu Yu wanted to kill Situ Jin, then he had to kill Situ Kang.

Wu Yu had no choice!

Under the eyes of numerous spectators, Wu Yu took a good hold of the Daemon Suppressing Sword before charging forward at Situ Kang, each step of his causing cracks to form on the ground. His killing intent had increased once again after killing three people continuously.

“<<Sweeping Across the Sea>>!”

“<<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>>!”

Chapter 17: Rebirth from the Ashes

Aaaaannnnnd Chapter 17 is done.

p.s. For every two chapters of Lugal Gigam, I'll release one StH chapter.

Thanks for all the support!

Edited by: KradoK

With the Daemon Suppressing Sword as his weapon, this time the execution of <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>> was infinitely more fierce and powerful than the last time against Qing Mang.

The anger, rage, and hatred Wu Yu felt against Situ Jin boiled within him, fueling and energizing this mighty attack.

However, Situ Kan had reached the 7th Heavenly Stage for quite some time already, and had more battle experience than Wu Yu. He remained calm and without fear in front of Wu Yu's attack, taking a step forward and retaliating with a swing of his broadsword.

The two swords clashed!

"<<One Thousand Meters of Ice>>!"

Situ Kang constructed a picture scroll of a world frozen in ice out of his sword swings, and instantly a blast of cold wind leaped forward, created out of a series of sword jabs. The attack was very dangerous, and was mightier than Situ Jin's best attack by at least ten times.

"Brother, kill him! Cut off his flesh inch by inch!" Situ Jin would never forget today's embarrassment at the hands of Wu Yu. Since he has not died, he wanted to make Wu Yu despair and suffer in pain.

Clang!

Wu Yu's <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>> and Situ Kang's <<One Thousand Meters of Ice>> clashed with each other numerous times. Even though Wu Yu's

willpower and emotions had become one with his sword, Situ Kang had the strength of 200 battlehorses. In the end, Wu Yu was knocked back, forced to retreat 10 steps, with the Daemon Suppressing Sword nearly slipping out of his grip.

“Wu Yu’s finished.”

“Situ Kang’s strength is twice that of Wu Yu!”

The spectating disciples immediately erupted into discussion, looking at Wu Yu with eyes of pity. They believed he was going to die right after being initiated into the Sect.

Suspense no longer enveloped the podium.

“Big brother, don’t kill him too quick! Let me stab him a few times first!” Situ Jin stood up shakily, eyes savage and full of hatred.

Situ Kang’s face remained ice cold. He charged forwards towards Wu Yu, his feet executing a profound footwork technique. He raised his frosty broadsword up, then striking down for the kill. Wu Yu, who was covered in layers of ice, did not seem to have any chances of survival under Situ Kang’s powerful attack.

To him, Situ Kang was just too strong.

It was as if he really was in a world frozen with ice.

Immense danger befell Wu Yu.

Situ Jin had killed Sun Wudao, yet he was still alive despite Wu Yu’s efforts, strutting around with impunity. Right now, Situ Jin was even more arrogant than before. Even if he was covered in blood, he stood there with his eyes filled to the brim with expectation of watching Wu Yu dies in despair.

“Wu Yu, you are fated to die by my hands. You want to avenge that old man’s death? Too bad, you’re don’t have the power to do so, hahaha!”

Situ Jin laughed like a madman.

Situ Kang’s fatal blow neared.

“I cannot die yet!”

He had just stepped on the path of Celestials, who could he die now?

Under the blazing sun, Wu Yu felt as if he was on fire; he was not afraid of Situ Kang. Even if Situ Kang was ice cold and incredibly chilling, his body was still warm and full of heart! Wu Yu had a heart of absolute sincerity.

“That Qitian Big Saint is very mighty and powerful, so as the person who’d inherited his legacy, how can I die in the hands of such a petty little man!”

He was prideful, he was cocky, he was brazen. He smiled a cold smile.

This was not over yet.

From the battle of the Celestial Ascendance Podium two hours ago, and the big battle and slaughter here on Heaven’s Cry Podium now, there was not a moment that Wu Yu was not nervous, and not under the shine of the blazing sun. Therefore, his skin and his flesh was constantly exposed to the glare of the sun’s rays, to the searing of True Sunfire.

Situ Kang charged him again, but Wu Yu managed to block the assault, at the cost of dropping the Daemon Suppressing Sword and nearly flying off the mountain.

“Wu Yu, time to die.” Situ Jin laughed savagely, hidden behind Situ Kang’s back.

Whoosh!

Wu Yu had no weapons left, so Situ Kang rushed at him again, bringing down his frosty broadsword at his head.

“I, Wu Yu!”

At that moment, Wu Yu spread his arms, basking under the rays of the sun. Golden True Sunfire blazed all around his bloody, searing his flesh, his skin, his bones, his tendons and his inner organs.

He raised his head and looked at Situ Kang, Situ Jin and the spectating disciples with shining, golden eyes.

“I am an indestructible Vajra, everlasting and immortal!”

“You are mortals, unable to hurt my invulnerable body!”

“Today is the start of my journey as a cultivator! From now on, in Heaven and

Earth, I Wu Yu will rebel against anybody who oppresses me! I will kill all those who sin, repay gratitude with gratitude, repay hatred with hatred, and grant justice to all those who live under Heaven!”

“Golden Battle Blood, rise!”

Wu Yu had changed his blood in the middle of a battle! It was a very dangerous action that could result in death, as he also had to fend off Situ Kang whilst doing it!

Golden flames burned within his blood in his veins, arteries and capillaries, evolving from his normal blood into Golden Battle Blood under the shine of the sun’s rays. The rays flowed around and through his body.

“What! He’s only reached the 4th Heavenly Stage, and is attempting to breakthrough into the 5th Heavenly Stage now?!”

“No way, a 4th Heavenly Stage expert only has the strength of 20 battlehorses – right now Wu Yu has at least the strength of 120!”

“Miracle! An absolute miracle!”

Upon noticing that Wu Yu was changing his blood, all the spectating disciples went into a stupor.

Wu Yu, a 4th Heavenly Stage expert was fighting against a 7th Heavenly Stage expert, and he’d not died yet!

Immense shock struck the spectating disciples like a giant mallet to the head, causing their minds to go blank except for the scene of Wu Yu changing his blood.

This was Wu Yu’s second time changing his blood.

The process was very familiar, as he knew of the techniques needed and how to face the difficulties changing blood would bring. At that moment, Situ Kang’s killing intent reached Wu Yu, triggering all his latent potential. It was an opportune moment to finally breakthrough the wall that had barred him from reaching the 5th Heavenly Stage!

Situ Kang’s face drained slightly of colour upon noticing what Wu Yu was about to do, but he continued assaulting him. Situ Jin, who was behind Situ Kang,

retreated three steps. He said, with a shocked expression “Even though he’s already 15 years old, what he’s doing right now is incredibly terrifying and in defiance of common sense; if he manages to succeed, then he’ll become a dangerous threat to us. Big brother, you have to destroy him!”

“Talk less bullshit!”

Situ Kang understood this principle as well; Wu Yu was already so strong at the 4th Heavenly Stage. Even if he was quite old already, if he was allowed to grow up, he’d become a very dangerous and powerful enemy.

Situ Kang extended his body into a lethal lunge at Wu Yu’s throat.

Boom!

Wu Yu had finished changing his blood, and had officially become a 5th Heavenly Stage Expert.

Forge Muscles, Grind Tendons, Refine Bones, Strengthen Inner Organs, and Change Blood!

He’d returned back to the Cultivational Status he had back when he was still Prince Heir, but he was now many times stronger than before.

Wu Yu opened his eyes, and the tip Situ Kang’s sword was an inch from his neck.

A shocking moment!

Wu Yu smiled coldly, then shot his hands forward. He tightly grabbed hold of Situ Kang’s sharp blade with a Ka Cha, as if his hands were made out of steel. No matter how much Situ Kang put into the sword, he could not get it to budge one inch!

“What?”

The spectating disciples burst into exclamations of surprise again.

Wu Yu had actually managed to stop the lethal sword strike with his bare hands!

Situ Jin looked like he’d just been struck by lightning.

Situ Kang’s face drained of colour, because he could feel immense strength

emanating from Wu Yu's body that was completely suppressing him. He struggled to thrust forwards with his sword into Wu Yu's throat and out the other side.

Yes, after changing his blood, Wu Yu now had the strength of 300 battlehorses. That was a full 100 battlehorses more than Situ Kang.

"Second Brother, call Bright!" At that moment, under immense surprise and shock, Situ Kang could only ask his overpowered little brother for help.

His voice suddenly cut off with a gasp.

As Wu Yu kept hold of Situ Kang's sword with one hand, he formed a fist with the other hand and rammed it into Situ Kang's chest. With an extremely loud boom, Situ Kang's armor instantly shattered into countless tiny fragments, which clanged off the ground.

"Ughhhhh...."

Situ Kang's sword fell slowly onto the floor with a clang. His eyes widened, blood leaked from his mouth, and then he collapsed weakly onto the floor. All his inner organs had been shattered, and the blood that leaked out from his body was black.

"Big Brother!"

Situ Jin's face drained of blood and he collapsed to the ground on his knees.

In one instant, Situ Kang fell into defeat from certain victory.

The heir of his Situ Family had died.

The podium was deathly silent. All the spectating disciples hurriedly retreated a few steps, staring at Wu Yu with eyes filled with respect, and a slight tinge of fear. Wu Yu, who was currently shining brilliantly with a golden light, was going to haunt their dreams from now on.

Even though the disciples on scene were above Wu Yu in terms of Cultivational Status, none of them had the courage to approach him and stop him.

"I will not let you have any chance of living again."

Wu Yu's face was incredibly impassive and cold. Killing Situ Jin's 3 friends and

his big brother was not enough to sate the hatred he felt within him. Maybe only Sit Jin's death, the person he hated the most, could satiate his anger and his rage.

He retrieved the Daemon Suppressing Sword, and walked over to Situ Jin in a few steps. Situ Jin was collapsed on the floor, traumatised and in shock.

"Raise your head." Wu Yu lifted the Daemon Suppressing Sword, and looked at Situ condescendingly from above.

"W – Wu Yu, my little brother Situ Bright..."

Situ Jin looked at Wu Yu with eyes crying tears of blood, uttering those words out with considerable effort. It seemed that he finally regretted his actions, but it was all for nothing, because it was too late.

"Sun Wudao told me that Mortals could not fight against Celestials. He's wrong, because Mortals can fight against Celestials once they have transcended and become Celestials themselves. Am I right, Situ Jin?" Wu Yu looked at him with searing eyes.

"Right, right!" Situ Jin nodded his head in a panic.

At that moment, everybody on scene felt like they were asphyxiating.

Wu Yu raised his head and looked at the sky, as if he could see the already deceased Sun Wudao through the Celestial Mist that enshrouded the mountain.

"Uncle Sun, from now on, no matter what dangers and problems I may face, no matter who may suppress and oppress me, I'll face them head on without fear. I'd rather die than to surrender! Thank you for giving me the opportunity to stage a comeback, to be reborn from the ashes!"

Whoosh.

After the last word left his lips, the Daemon Suppressing Sword struck downwards, severing Situ Jin's head from his body. The head rolled down the mountain, to never be seen again.

At that moment, Wu Yu's mind and soul was enlightened, taking a great leap in **quality** (in power and in maturity).

"So this is what the path of Celestials is like."

The path of Celestials was savage and brutal. Not only did one who has stepped on it have to cultivate, they also have to compete against others!

Fight against the Heavens, fight against the Earth, fight against other humans, fight against Daemons!

Only if one fights will one become strong!

“To cultivate means to plunder, and the strong will always be right even if they were in the wrong!”

This phrase was the foundation of cultivation.

After Situ Jin’s death, the fires of rage and anger gradually subsided from Wu Yu’s heart. He stood on top of Heaven’s Cry Podium like a Mortal, without the golden light that he emitted back during his battle with the Situ brother’s.

All the disciples on scene were gazing at him.

Wu Yu knew that he was going to suffer some consequences for his actions. After all, he couldn’t remain absolutely scot free after killing 5 people in a row. Karma just didn’t work that way.

This was the Sword to Heaven Sect which had strict punishments on those that broke.

“Big Brother, Second Brother...”

As Situ Jin’s head rolled off the mountain, a few people emerged from the mists and cloud surrounding the mountain. They were a group of young men and women, and their mode of transportation was not the Celestial Crane, but a great white Roc, which was faster than a Celestial Crane by multiple times. The group of young men and women hopped off the Roc and onto the Podium. They were all like Su Yanli, with the Cultivational Status and the air of a true Shangxian; they had to be at least Core Disciples.

A group of very powerful people who’d already surpassed the phase of Martial Arts and into the realm of Celestialism!

Amongst them was a 13 year old boy. He did not have a tall stature, but had delicate and pretty features like a girl. A mane of long hair washed down his back, glinting with strands of blue light, and his eyes also shined with a blue light

that seemed to be lightning. Under the accompaniment of the group of Core Disciples, he had made his way here upon receiving Situ Jin's cry for help without delay, to witness the deaths of Situ Jin and Situ Kang at the hands of Wu Yu.

He was the 13 year old overpowered genius, Situ Bright!

Chapter 18: 7 Days & 7 Nights

Chapter 18 peeps!

Edited by: KradoK

Situ Bright, 13 years old, teenage super genius!

He had already reached the 10th Heavenly Stage “Tongshen” of the Body Forging Phase, and was just a step away from condensing his Qi and truly stepping on the path of Celestialism.

Currently, that legendary figure was standing in front of Wu Yu, and Wu Yu could not deny that he was incredibly powerful and terrifying.

Wu Yu had never seen a person who’d reached the peak of Martial Arts before during his time as the Prince Heir of East Yue Wu; the strongest person he’d seen was a 100 year old man who’d reached the 9th Heavenly Stage. Close to dying of old age, the old man did not have the strength to fight anymore, much like Sun Wudao.

Situ Bright, was a super genius who’d had ballads and books written about his exploits. He was so talented that nobody could estimate how strong he’d become in the future, but everybody knew that he’d surpass the Sect Leader one day.

And right now, he’d witnessed with his own eyes the deaths of his two big brothers at Wu Yu’s hands.

He glared at Wu Yu with such fury and hatred that Wu Yu felt as if he was transported into a world of snow and ice where nothing grew. The frigid winds bit into his skin, and the stench of death enshrouded him.

“What is your name?” Situ Bright asked, walking towards him slowly step by step.

Reportedly, “Tongshen” Stage experts had the strength of 2000 battlehorses, and could fight against an army of thousands of men and horses by the

lonesome. If a Mortal Kingdom had a “Tongshen” Stage warrior willing to fight for them, they could conquer the whole of Dongsheng God Continent!

“Wu Yu. Wu, the character with 口 on top and 天 on the bottom, the Wu that swallows the Heavens!” Wu Yu stood upright and straight, not willing to bow his head down to Situ Bright’s overwhelming strength.

“You have killed my two big brothers. For that, I’ll make you die a death so painful that you will wish you were never born.” Blue lightning flashed within Situ Bright’s eyes. Even though he was only 13 years old, he had a wisdom beyond his age.

Wu Yu did not reply, because the pressure that Situ Bright was emitting made him realize that right now was not the time to be arrogant and proud. Even though he was the number one genius in East Yue Wu, he was dog shit compared to Situ Bright. No matter how talented one is, there will always be someone more talented.

“Big Brothers and Big Sisters, is it all right for me to take him away?” Situ Bright turned his head to look at the few Core Disciples beside him. Those Core Disciples seemed to be of high status within the Sect, and if Wu Yu did not guess wrong, they should be the disciples of the Sect Protector.

In the Sword to Heaven Sect, the Sect Leader Sovereign had the most authority, and second to him was the Sect Protector Sovereign. Many of the internal affairs of the Sect were actually managed by the Sect Protector, so in actuality, the two were of equal status.

The disciples of the Sect Protector were of the same social status as Su Yanli.

Reportedly, the Sect Protector wanted to take Situ Bright as her disciple when he successfully condenses his Qi and truly steps onto the path of Celestialism. Therefore, it was quite normal for Situ Bright to be hanging out with her disciples.

“Little Brother, don’t worry, do as you like with this Wu Yu.” A male disciple said indifferently. It was obvious that killing Wu Yu on the spot wouldn’t quench Situ Bright’s hatred, therefore the Sect Protector’s disciples gave Situ Bright the go ahead to torture Wu Yu in any way he liked.

“Thank you.” Situ Bright turned his head back and walked over to Wu Yu.

From Situ Bright’s attitude, it was obvious that he didn’t think of Wu Yu as a serious threat. In all honesty, with his current strength, there was not many people he would view as an equal in the Sword to Heaven Sect.

At that moment, Wu Yu finally experienced the power and might of a 10th Heavenly Stage expert. Situ Bright was a mighty tiger, and he was a defenceless, vulnerable little rabbit.

“What should I do?!”

Wu Yu did not know, but what he did know was that avenging Sun Wudao’s death was a good decision, even at the cost of being tortured by Situ Bright. As long as he was still alive, there was still hope could make a comeback!

Ding Ding!

Snow and ice raged around him, biting and slicing open his skin, causing bloodstains to appear all over his body.

Hua!

Just as Situ Bright was about to suppress and crush him, a girl, dress fluttering in the breeze, appeared before him. She was ensconced within Celestial Mist, but Wu Yu knew who she was just from looking at her figure.

Su Yanli.

She was so beautiful that **she could cause a mighty Kingdom to fall into ruin.** (A Chinese Idiom that means a woman is extremely beautiful. [Daji](#) is a fine example of how a woman’s beauty can ruin a Kingdom)

Wu Yu was touched deep in his heart.

This was not the first time that she’d saved him from certain death.

Why was she saving him, a mere servant turned disciple?

“Big Sister Su.” Upon noticing Su Yanli’s arrival, Situ Bright stopped attempting to suppress Wu Yu and take him away. He had just witnessed the death of his two brothers, yet he was calm and unruffled, quite the cold-blooded creature.

Wu Yu, upon knowing that Sun Wudao had been murdered, had gone

completely ballistic.

Compared to Situ Bright's calmness and restraint, Wu Yu would rather go on a rampage and vent his emotions, because he wasn't a cold-blooded creature like Situ Bright.

"Mn."

Su Yanli nodded her head. Her long dress along with its long beads danced in the wind, fluttering onto Wu Yu's face. Instantly, Wu Yu could smell an aroma that refreshed his soul.

"Big Sister Su, I have to take him away." Situ Bright said neither haughtily nor humbly.

"He's a member of my Yan Li Mountain. Nobody can take him away."

Never in his life did Situ Bright expect that Su Yanli would protect a servant who'd just been initiated into the Sect as a disciple! Even if he had a cold and cruel personality, he could not help but get a little angry "Big Sister Su, he has killed 5 Outer Disciples, and two of them were my big brothers! He should face punishment for doing so! You dare defy the Sect's rules?!"

"Situ Bright, you do not represent the Sect and besides, the people who should punish Wu Yu is not you, but the Elders and the Sect Leader."

"You!" Situ Bright's chest rose and fell in anger. What Su Yanli said was correct, he did not have the authority to decide and carry out Wu Yu's punishment.

"Now now, don't play around, Su Yanli. The Sect Rules are dead, whilst we are living! Wu Yu has committed a savage atrocity, and killed Situ Bright's two elder brothers, so give us some face by handing him over to Bright." The disciples of the Sect Protector walked forward towards Su Yanli one by one.

To them, Su Yanli's actions were quite atypical.

Wu Yu was only a new initiate, an Outer Disciple, whilst they were the disciples of the Sect Leader and the Sect Protector, two of the most powerful beings within the Sect. Why would she, somebody who had a social status hundreds of times higher than Wu Yu, offend them for him? That was just plain stupid!

After all, they were the mainstays of the Sword to Heaven Sect in the future.

Of course, Wu Yu also thought that there was no need for Su Yanli to make enemies with them over him.

Maybe it was because there was rivalry and a power struggle between the Sect Leader and the Sect Protector's factions?

"I've already contacted Master. The Sect Leader will be arriving soon."

Su Yanli's words shocked the crowd of disciples! A lot of disciples who'd been in the Sect for years had never seen the Sect Leader in person! And today, they were going to see him with their own eyes because of Wu Yu!

The Sect Leader was a Jindan Celestial, and the founder as well as the undisputed No. 1 of the Sword to Heaven Sect!

"Sect Leader!"

The faces of the disciples of the Sect Protector drained in colour.

Even someone as strong as the Sect Protector had to fall under the jurisdiction of the Sect Leader. The Sect Leader was the strongest person in the Sect. He was law. And the Sect Protector wasn't currently within the sect, so if the Sect Leader wanted to help Wu Yu, then there was nothing they could do.

However, they weren't all that worried, as why would the Sect Leader show partiality for Wu Yu?

But still, Situ Bright was clenching fist. People couldn't tell from his appearance, but he was currently still in a rage.

"Sect Leader..." Wu Yu thought of the person who'd brought him here. The Sect Leader, like Sun Wudao, was somebody who'd changed his fate, his life. To that Jindan Celestial, Wu Yu had nothing but respect.

Did Su Yanli leave right after the exam to see the Sect Leader?

Heaven's Cry Peak burst into an uproar.

Suddenly, a golden light could be seen in the sky. An enormous golden sword zoomed about the air, piercing through the clouds, and stood upon it was a black-haired middle-aged man who had his hands behind his back. The Sword Qi that the man emanated was so strong that it could shake the Heavens!"

“It’s him!”

Wu Yu only had to look once to recognise him.

“Sect Leader!”

All the people present lay prostrate on the floor, including Su Yanli. Wu Yu had kowtowed before him long ago; this was his second time doing so. Wu Yu was a person who would not bow before anyone except for his parents, but the Sect Leader was an exception, because he was someone to be respected, and because he was Wu Yu’s saviour.

“I know of what has happened here today. The whole story.” The Sect Leader’s voice echoed about the mountain.

“Sect Leader, I beseech you to leave the punishment of Wu Yu to me. He has killed five people, disobeying the laws of the Sect!” Situ Bright said calmly.

All the disciples looked respectfully at this Jindan Celestial out of the legends.

Feng Xue Ya was not affected by Situ Bright “Situ Jin and his friends murdered a hundred-year old man, an incredibly immoral action. Therefore, they are unworthy of being disciples of my Sword to Heaven Sect! Situ Kang helped those who were immoral. He too, was unworthy of being a disciple of my Sword to Heaven Sect. They deserved their deaths. The disciples of my Sword to Heaven Sect, who are cultivators of justice, and of the sword, have to be able to face their consciences and their swords!”

“The swords of sword cultivators should be used to slay daemons! Those that use the sword against defenseless old men are the disgrace of my Sect!”

His words swept through the endless Blue Surge Mountain Range like thunder and lightning, so loud that everybody within the mountains heard them! It was the voice of the Sect Leader! The most respected voice within the Blue Surge Mountain Range, because without him, there would be no Sword to Heaven Sect!

Everybody respected him.

A Jindan Celestial, his words carried a might that ensured nobody dared resist against him, and ensured nobody could resist against him.

Situ Bright did not expect that the Sect Leader would give this verdict. He stood there, shocked, with the disciples of the Sect Protector.

But after some thorough thinking, he could sense the logic within the Sect Leader's words. How could cultivators that did not slay demons, but rather bully and murder defenseless old men be on the side of justice?

“No!”

Situ Bright knew that he no longer had the chance to suppress and take away Wu Yu.

However, no matter how hard he tried, he could not gather the courage to voice out his objection. Under the might of a Jindan Celestial, there was nothing he could do but bow and tremble in fear.

“Wu Yu, you have killed 5 people. Even though those five have committed atrocities, your actions were incredibly violent. Therefore, I sentence you to 1 year in prison to repent for your actions.” Feng Xue Ya's voice reverberated throughout the mountains once again.

That was the Sect Leader's verdict.

Situ Bright did not want to give in.

He was about to go crazy.

But, he was suppressed by the Sect Leader's aura, so he had no choice but to give in.

Even those disciples who had reached the Condensing Qi Phase had to give in.

This was Feng Xue Ya's world. He was law.

To Wu Yu, everything that had happened just now was unbelievable.

Being imprisoned for 1 year was not really a punishment, but a form of protection for him. Situ Bright could not take revenge against him for at least a year!

The end result was totally unexpected to him.

Shock and gratitude welled within his chest.

The sect Leader had saved him again!

Why he saved him again, Wu Yu had no idea. Maybe it was because there was rivalry between the Sect Leader and the Sect Protector? Or maybe it was because the Sect Leader had discovered his shocking talent?

Sun Wudao, Su Yanli and Feng Xue Ya were his saviours. They would always bring him the light of hope when there was nothing but darkness.

Words could not express his feelings, so Wu Yu would deeply engrave what they had done into his heart and seek for opportunities to repay them in the future. He had already missed his chance to repay Sun Wudao; he was not going to miss it for Su Yanli and Feng Xue Ya.

“Sect Leader, Wu Yu has killed people... why is his punishment so light?” Situ Jin uttered, resisting Feng Xue Ya’s suppressive aura.

The Sect Leader looked at him from upon his Giant Sword, causing Situ Bright to swallow the rest of his words down his throat.

“Situ Bright, only those with a pure heart can form a Jindan.”

Each of Feng Xue Ya’s words struck Situ Bright’s heart like a sword. Situ Bright was arrogant, and thought that he himself was invincible, but now he knew that he wasn’t, because he could feel that the Sect Leader could kill him with a stare.

“Bright, there will always be opportunities to take away and torture Wu Yu. Our master’s not in the Sect, so we can only let him be. It seems that the Sect Leader has taken a liking towards him because of his talent.” A disciple of the Sect Protector whispered to Situ Bright.

“I understand. Let’s wait for one year, then.”

They obviously could not object against the Sect Leader’s decision with their current strength, and because the Sect Protector was not in the Sect, nobody was there to support them. Nothing good would be waiting for them if they denounced Feng Xue Ya’s verdict.

“Wu Yu, I’ll be waiting for you to come out of prison after a year’s time. I, Situ Bright, shall come forth to challenge you once again!” Situ Bright’s eyes flared with the flames of fury and hatred.

Wu Yu was immersed in the happiness that Feng Xue Ya had given him, but he

knew that Situ Bright's hatred against him still remained.

In the days to come, he'd have to endure the Situ Bright's killing intent. As long as Situ Bright was alive, he would always be in danger, unless he surpassed Situ Bright in terms of power.

"In one year, you won't be my opponent." Wu Yu said calmly.

"What?!"

The crowd of disciples could not help but laugh after hearing Wu Yu's words. In all honesty, even though Situ Bright had burnt his fingers today under the hands of Wu Yu today, nobody really believed that Wu Yu could best Situ Bright.

One was 15, whilst the other one was only 13!

And the most importantly, the 13 year old had already reached the Peak of Martial Arts, and was, reportedly, about to condense his Qi and become a Core Disciple.

"How funny." Situ Bright did not really consider Wu Yu to be a threat. I mean, who would? He was only 13, and had already reached the "Tongshen" stage, whilst Wu Yu, who was 15, had only reached the 5th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts.

Wu Yu did not reply. Surpassing Situ Bright within his year of imprisonment was going to be his goal.

"Wu Yu, come with me to 'Repentance Mountain', where inmates are jailed."

The Sect Leader was actually going to take Wu Yu to jail in person! The disciples on scene were shocked at the Sect Leader's partiality towards Wu Yu.

From today onwards, Wu Yu would be imprisoned within 'Repentance Mountain'. And from today onwards, his name would be known throughout the Blue Surge Mountain Range!

Whoosh!

In the blink of an eye, Wu Yu found himself standing on top of the Golden Sword by the side of the Sect Leader, Feng Xue Ya.

Chapter 19: Worshipping the Ancestor's of East Yue Wu

This is an unedited chapter! Or is it???

Chapter 19! Thing's are starting to spicen up!

Edited by: Kradok

"Sect Leader, there's something I want to ask of you."

"Tell me about it."

"Sun Wudao is like a father to me, so I want to bury him and stand vigil by his catafalque. Can you give me seven extra days before you put me in jail?"

"Authorised."

And like that, Wu Yu left with Su Yanli back to Yan Li Mountain under the hatred-filled eyes of Situ Bright.

"Sister Su."

Su Yanli's hair whipped in the breeze, and her dress fluttered about like it was dancing. She looked ethereal on top of her Celestial Crane above the clouds.

"What?" She turned her head to look at Wu Yu.

"Thanks." He poured all his feelings of gratitude into this word. Su Yanli made Wu Yu think of Princess Wu You, because she was also somebody who took good care of himself.

"No need. It's true, though, that you have to work hard, because I don't think I can save you again if you lose to Situ Bright in a year. Remember that in the Sword to Heaven Sect, one does not need to dirty their own hands to kill someone. Situ Bright won't let you go. He has the resources and the connections to kill you without lifting a single finger." Su Yanli exhorted.

"I'll remember this piece of advice. In one year right? I understand."

To Wu Yu, living past today was a miracle, almost as if the Gods had blessed him, so he wasn't scared of any fight a whole year away. He had confidence that he'd walk far in the path of cultivation, and that his future was going to be glorious and splendid.

The Kingdom of East Yue Wu... he had to go back.

It seemed that word of his feat had reached Yan Li Mountain, as the servants all stared at him like he was God upon touchdown on the mountain.

Wu Yu buried Sun Wudao next to the spot where Sun Wudao had once buried him.

Engraved upon Sun's gravestone were the words: "Stepfather, Sun Wudao's grave"

Even though they had a great age difference, Wu Yu considered him as his father.

A father that was different to his biological father, the Emperor of East Yue Wu.

Wu Yu bowed by Sun's grave for 7 days and 7 nights.

"I'm going now. I'll return to visit you in a year."

"When I return, I'll make you even more proud of me."

After Wu Yu left, Sun Wudao's grave shone with a golden light, and if one looked closely, one would make out a wrinkled, smiling face within the light.

A strand of golden hair flew out of the grave, dancing in the breeze.

The strand of hair did not look like a human's hair, but an animal's!

"Wu Yu, we'll meet again."

The strand of hair danced higher and higher, before disappearing in the night sky.

"In this vast and endless world, you and I are the only descendants of 'his' left."

The smiling face on the gravestone gradually faded away, and before long the darkness reigned once again.

...

Repentance Mountain, the Brigs.

The jail cells were completely sealed off from the outside world, without any windows or gaps. They were 10 feet wide and 5 feet high, so standing up fully was an impossible feat.

One would go insane if imprisoned within one of these jail cells for a long time.

“Wu Yu.”

The Jindan Celestial and Su Yanli were outside Wu Yu’s jail cell.

“Sect Leader.” Wu Yu replied respectfully.

“If you can best Situ Bright in your duel with him one year later, I’ll take you as my 5th disciple even if you haven’t condensed your Qi.”

Wu Yu nearly went crazy from happiness.

Back when he asked the Sect Leader to take him in as an apprentice on their first encounter, Wu Yu did not expect this wish would one day come true. After all, he’d been crippled by Soul Severing Powder, and his latent potential was still mediocre at best.

If he managed to defeat Situ Bright, then his status within the Sect would be on par with Su Yanli’s! The things he could do, and the Daoist Arts he could learn then... A whole new world would open before him!

“Thank you Sect Leader!”

He hadn’t beaten Situ Bright yet, so he could not directly call Feng Xue Ya Master.

His 5th disciple...

“See you in a year.” Su Yanli gave a faint smile.

“Sister Su!” Wu Yu raised his head.

“What?”

“I want to know of your ranking within Sect Leader’s disciples.”

“I’m Sect Leader’s 4th disciple, and coincidentally, I have the least potential

out of the lot.”

“Then I swear that I, Wu Yu, will one day become your 5th little brother!”

“Mn.”

The door of the jail cell shut with a finality.

A horrible silence permeated the air. No light was present within the cell, only darkness.

One year.

To Wu Yu, this was nothing, because the light of hope burned within him.

This one year within the cell was a great opportunity for him to cultivate and reach greater realms.

Wu Yu started to cultivate.

At the same time, Feng Xue Ya and Su Yanli took off from Repentance Mountain, soaring away into the cloud laden sky.

“Yanli, what you said was right. The legacy that he’d inherited is much more powerful and profound than we expected. However, he has an intelligent mind and determination that belies his age. I’m willing to become his pathfinder and to protect him from going into harm’s way. This is our [yuanfen](#).” Feng Xue Ya said.

“Somebody who values friendship and loyalty, Wu Yu is a good person. Whether it’s his intelligence, resilience or talent, he meets all the criteria to become your disciple. The Sect Protector’s disciples are getting stronger and stronger with each passing year; master, you’re feeling the pressure too, right?” Su Yanli replied, robe dancing and fluttering in the clouds.

Feng Xue Ya laughed coldly “If she didn’t come from that place, that woman...”

...

Heaven’s Cry Mountain.

One day, the clouds suddenly erupted into a frenzy, and ice started to form on the mountain, eventually covering it from head to toe.

The roar of a teenager reverberated in the air.

“Somebody has successfully condensed their Qi!”

“Holy shit!”

“Who!?”

“Do you even have to ask? It’s Heaven’s Cry Mountain, so it has to be Situ Bright!”

The Blue Surge Mountain Range went into an uproar.

It was only upon learning of the news of Situ Bright successfully condensing his Qi that people remembered and thought of the imprisoned Wu Yu, and of the battle, the commotion that had taken place on Heaven’s Cry Mountain. That day, even the Sect Leader had appeared.

Everything that had happened in the confrontation between Wu Yu and the Situ brothers was beneficial towards Wu Yu, except for the challenge he’d issued at Situ Bright, which had become a running gag in the Sword to Heaven Sect. Now that Situ Bright had successfully condensed his Qi, the challenge Wu Yu had issued seemed all the more funny, all the more pitiable.

“I bet Wu Yu will be dumbfounded when he’s released from prison and learns of this, haha!”

Looking at the roiling clouds on top of Heaven’s Cry Mountain, a lot of disciples could not resist the urge to laugh.

A VIP descended upon Heaven’s Cry Mountain. It was a an extremely beautiful blue-robed woman who gave off a mature and sexual charm that really appealed to young men.

She was the Sect Protector!

Yes, the Sect Protector was a woman, and was also a Jindan Celestial.

“Situ Bright, from today onwards, you’re my 5th disciple.” The Sect Protector’s voice echoed throughout the Blue Surge Mountain Range, as if challenging the authority of one particular person.

“Thank you master, Bright will not disappoint you!”

Situ Bright had waited for this moment for a long time.

He looked at the Sect Protector, who was stood on top of her Blue Sword in the air, with searing eyes.

“Wu Yu, the time of your death is getting closer and closer. My master has already returned. The only thing left is to wait for you to be released from prison.”

Would Wu Yu really be able to stop Situ Bright’s meteoric rise?

....

Each year on the 15th of August, the Kingdom of East Yue Wu would worship their ancestors.

The Capital City was prosperous and thriving like always.

It was especially lively and bustling with noise today, as the Royal’s were going to worship their ancestors today!

The newly appointed Emperor Yuan Hao, the Empress Yuan Xi and many other important people within the Kingdom had gathered in front of the Ancestor Palace. Crowded around the palace were the citizens of the capital, so squished together that many people could feel their skulls being crushed. It was worth it, though, because they could get to view such a holy, ceremonious event!

Yuan Hao was dressed in a robe decorated with dragons. Even though he looked a bit tender and naive, he had the air of an Emperor; ambition and lust glinted within his eyes.

The Empress Yuan Xi was even more eye-catching, her looks incredibly seductive and alluring.

Not far behind them was Princess Wu You, known far and wide for her beauty. She was the most beautiful woman within the country; even the Empress Yuan Xi could not match her beauty and elegance.

The many citizens on scene looked at the rulers of their Kingdom with respectful, yet envious eyes.

The Emperor Yuan Hao was currently lighting incense sticks to worship the Royal line’s ancestors. The procession of the most important men and women of

the Kingdom looked on with solemnity.

“Thank you Founding Emperor, thank you my ancestors, for fighting hard and making East Yue Wu what it is today!”

“Today, Yuan Hao will worship his ancestors!”

“I wish that my East Yue Wu will remain strong and powerful for generations to come, and be blessed with prosperity and luck!”

The new Emperor spoke with self-confidence and aplomb, his powerful voice echoing far and wide.

“So this is Emperor Yuan Hao. He seems extraordinary, and looks incredibly valiant and handsome, just like the rumours.” Many citizens praised.

The New Emperor of East Yue Wu, Wu Yuan Hao.

*In the corner of the crowd, a man dressed in rags smiled coldly “You’re calling this piece of shit valiant and extraordinary? He fucking looks like a girl. Have you not seen Prince Heir Wu Yu before? He is what I call valiant and heroic, a true man; within this Kingdom, who can compare with him? This Yuan Hao can’t even compare with a strand of Wu Yu’s hair. Back then when Marshal Wu’s son was messing and rampaging about the Capital, committing atrocities, Wu Yu sentenced him to death and killed him without second thought. **Does this Yuan Hao even have the courage to kill a chicken*?**”*

“You! You! How could you say this?! This is outrageous!” A woman standing by his side had heard his mutterings.

“What’s so outrageous about what I said? It’s the truth that Yuan Hao is a piece of trash, and this Empress of his, who we know nothing of, is a bitch!” The man in rags spoke louder and louder without a hint of fear.

“You sure do have guts, to mention Prince Yu. The act that Prince Yu had committed that year was so atrocious that it shocked the nation, who never knew that he was that kind of person! Hao Tian Shangxian appeared and exiled him to the borders; because his sin was too great, even daemons did not let him off, devouring him alive bones and all!” A scholar said.

The man in rags burst into laughter “How can you be blinded by appearances?”

*Yuan Xi was born a slut, and Yuan Hao was born a piece of trash. It is only Prince Yu who is as he looks – valiant, strong and courageous! I was a soldier within his army. The reason why we managed to conquer South Mountain Chao Kingdom was all because of him! **Beautiful girls are like clouds*** in South Mountain Chao Kingdom, yet Prince Yu did not bat an eyelid at them, so how could Yuan Xi make Wu Yu commit such an atrocity and rape her?”*

The man was a bit crazy today. He spoke louder and louder, shocking and disturbing numerous people.

*Many people doubted that Wu Yu would really commit such an act, but Hao Tian Shangxian said he did, **in front of the court!** So who would dare to think that somebody had framed Wu Yu? Hao Tian Shangxian was a goddamn Celestial! There was no way he would lie!*

Even though many people had their suspicions...

“Empress, somebody has started a commotion within the crowd by mentioning Prince Yu.”

Yuan Xi thought of that pitiable bug.

*She smiled calmly “Drag him down, and execute him by **tearing him apart with four horses**. Spread the word that those who mention Prince Yu will be killed, and their family massacred.”*

“Yes!”

Everybody trembled in terror. If they accidentally said Prince Yu, they were done. Finished. Dead.

“Empress, we’re worshipping our ancestors today. Aren’t you scared of disturbing and angering our ancestors?” Wu You said expressionlessly. The melancholy and sadness from three years ago still had not faded.

“Hmmm? Oh, then drag him out of the City first before executing him.” Yuan Xi covered her lips with her hand and laughed.

At that moment, Emperor Yuan Hao, who had finished worshipping his ancestors, returned.

“Big Sister Wu You, do you know that a man has conquered the 38 islands to

our east with his army and established the Kingdom “East God Kingdom”?”

“I’ve heard of this piece of news. Just a bunch of bandits and thieves.” Wu You replied.

Yuan Hao gave a faint smile “Don’t say it like that. Since they’ve established their own country, then they’re on equal terms with us. East God Kingdom has a navy fleet which my East Yue Wu cannot compare with. If we have the help of a navy fleet, then my East Yue Wu can continue to expand. And coincidentally, East God Continent wants to form an alliance with us.”

“This is a big, national matter, something which has nothing to do with me. Your Eminence, there is no need for you to tell me this.”

“Wu You, in fact, it has something to do with you.” Yuan Xi laughed again.

Yuan Hao said “Then let me say it directly. The new Emperor of East God Kingdom ‘Jiu Shijun’ wants to wed you. This alliance is very important to us if we want our East Yue Wu to continue to expand and thrive – the prosperity and happiness of our citizens depends on this, so don’t refuse.”

“Jiu Shijun, is a cold-blooded killer, a ruthless bandit, an evil fellow who commits atrocious crimes left and right.” Princess Wu You replied.

“You’re right, reportedly Jiu Shijun is a Martial Art Expert who has reached the 7th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts. Many Emperors in our Dongsheng God Continent do not have this kind of power.” Yuan Hao gave a small smile.

He thought that Princess Wu You had given in.

At that moment, Princess Wu You smiled, and said “Very well, then you can wed my corpse to this demonic killer.”

*“Forming alliances with **tigers and wolves*** is an action that will one day destroy our country. Yuan Hao, you’re not suitable to be an emperor.”*

After saying that, Wu You stood up and left with her attendant.

“This bitch, why can’t she see the big picture!” Yuan Hao shouted in anger.

“Hao Er, don’t get angry. Wu You is an intelligent and clever person, so if you get angry, you lose. She’s stubborn, but there are lots of methods that we can use to get her to yield and wed Jiu Shijun like a good girl.” Yuan Xi purred.

“Yes, mother, whatever you say.”

Does this Yuan Hao even have the courage to kill a chicken* – This means, I think, that the man in rags believes Yuan Hao, if put into Wu Yu’s shoes at that time, would not have the courage to kill the Marshal’s son

Beautiful girls are like clouds* – Beautiful girls everywhere

tigers and wolves* – In this context, evil and sinister people

Chapter 20: The Golden Quartz Meridian & the Monkey in the Heart

Nearly died trying to pump this chapter out yesterday How does Flowerbridgetoo even do it? Fuck. Now I feel sad

Anyways, the much awaited Chapter 20 is finally out! Enjoy, m'lads!

p.s. forgive me if some of the technique names sound absolutely shit and cheesy

Edited by: KradoK

The brig in Repentance Mountain was totally isolated from the rest of the world. No windows, only a small opening in the wall for ventilation. Wu Yu would eat and shit by that hole. No matter how he looked at it, the brig looked like an actual jail cell for criminals. A year in this pitch-black and narrow jail cell would probably make normal people go insane.

Feng Xue Ya probably locked Wu Yu up in there to test his will and his determination. Cultivators had to face many dangers and challenges, so those without great perseverance and resolve would either never become strong or die early.

Killing those five people on Heaven's Cry Peak had enlightened Wu Yu and increased his mental strength. Becoming an Outer Disciple had allowed him to finally step onto the Road of Celestials, so it is no wonder that his horizons had broadened. His way of thinking had changed.

Having to spend on year in a cramped and dark space did not frighten him. Because to him, an environment where nobody would disturb him was the perfect place to cultivate without distractions and reach for even greater power!

"The Dao of Swords truly is a wise Dao, a Dao of Justice. Even though I murdered five people on Heaven's Cry Peak, revealing my violent and bloodthirsty nature, the Sect did not sentence me to death. Even if the Sect was

tolerant with my actions, they would've crippled me, taken away my Martial Cultivation, and exiled me from the Sect... yet none of these things happened to me. Imprisonment is a rather light sentence..."

Wu Yu was not in a rush to cultivate. Using the rays of light that shone into the room from the ventilation hole, he read through thoroughly the three introductory books that Woodsong had given to him during the orientation. <<An Introduction to Sword Cultivation>> and <<An Introduction to the Blue Surge Mountain Range>> did not contain much content, so he finished reading those two books in two hours.

However, <<Atlas of the Dong Sheng God Continent>> was as thick as ten <<An Introduction to Sword Cultivation>> books piled up on top of each other. It contained a great deal of info about Dong Sheng Continent, such as the info on the 3000 Kingdoms, Celestial Sects, Powers, Families, the different Daemons that existed there, the Celestial Plants, Treasures, Daoist Arts, and even more. After finishing the book Wu Yu's eyes were opened, and his knowledge and understanding of the world increased.

"The world surely is a vast and boundless place. I'm only but a [frog in a well](#)."

"This colossal continent that I'm living on is called the 'Dong Sheng God Continent'. Surrounded on four sides by the endless ocean, the 'Dong Sheng God Continent', apart from places like big mountains and wide rivers, cultivation utopias, and places where Mortals can not access, is comprised of 3000 Mortal Kingdoms. My East Yue Wu, by happenstance, is located right smack in the most eastern part of the continent, but it has below average military strength, only 1/100 the military power of the strongest Kingdoms.

"The land occupied by the 3000 Kingdoms only take up, approximately, $\frac{1}{3}$ of the Dong Sheng God Continent. The remaining $\frac{2}{3}$ of the continent are either tall mountains, dangerous places, taboo locations, or places that Mortals can not survive in. Those areas are where Celestial Sects can be found, and also where daemons roam freely. According to legends they also contain treasure sites dating back from ancient times and battlefields where daemons and cultivators once clashed. Therefore, the Sword to Heaven Sect is Celestial Sect with relatively many dealings with the Mortal Realm."

After all, the Blue Surge Mountain Range was situated within the Mortal Realm. Mortals could absolutely climb over the mountains in the Blue Surge Mountain Range to reach the Sword to Heaven Sect if they were lucky.

Wu Yu sighed. “The world sure has gotten bigger after I stepped on the path of cultivation. I’m no longer confined within East Yue Wu; the Dong Sheng God Continent is out there for me to explore! What I don’t know is whether the Heavenly Celestial Domain is as big and vast as the Dong Sheng God Continent.”

The <<Atlas of Dong Sheng God Continent>> sure was a handy book for country bumpkins like Wu Yu.

“Thinking about the future is important, broadening my horizons is important, but ensuring that my foundations are stable and solid is even more important. I’ve only cultivated <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> to the 5th level of its 1st stage, and since I’ve already reached the 5th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, it’s time I geared up for some hard cultivation.”

He’d killed the two brothers Situ Jin and Situ Kang, making enemies with Situ Bright, their overpowered 13 year old little brother, in the process, so leaving the brig without enough strength was absolute suicide. Therefore, this year of time spent in jail was make or break for Wu Yu.

“Situ Bright huh.... because he’s so young, I’ll look particularly old when I fight against him.”

There was already a huge age difference between them, so it’d be extremely embarrassing if he was creamed by Situ Bright in battle. Not only would he lose face; the Sect Leader, his master, would also lose face.

In one year, Wu Yu had to mature and gain enough strength to pummel Situ Bright into the ground! Not an easy task.

“The sixth Big Technique of <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> for cultivators who’d reached the 5th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase was called <<Golden Quartz Meridians>>. After cultivating this technique, light would pierce through all the meridians in their body and shine brightly like the stars in the sky. My body would become as vast as the sky, and my meridians would blaze like the sun and the stars!”

<<Indestructible Vajra Body>> would get more and more profound and shocking as one cultivated it. Wu Yu understood that he was going to have a promising future after the dream of the towering pillar, but the path of cultivation was dangerous and perilous; if he was not cautious and prudent all the time, he would most probably die halfway and “gift” the legacy he’d inherited to the lucky person who killed him or found his corpse.

After surviving through a calamity, losing his rightful throne and reputation, Wu Yu learnt of the importance of treasuring things.

Cultivators had to endure through boring sessions of cultivation if they wanted to become more successful and gain power. By happenstance, the jail cell Wu Yu was in provided him with a great, silent environment to cultivate in, so taking advantage of this, he started to cultivate <<Golden Quartz Meridians>>. He drew the heat from the earth’s core underground and channeled it through his feet into his body. Wu Yu controlled and pumped the heat into all his meridians to create minute perforations within them in order to allow his Qi to pass through them. His end goal was to make them transform into Golden Quartz Meridians, like blazing stars inside his body.

There were a few hundred meridians spread throughout his body, which is quite a large amount. Because heat from the the core was much hotter than normal fire, those without great perseverance and endurance could not cultivate <<Golden Quartz Meridians>>.

Day in and day out, the brig warden would hear terrible, tragic screams of pain and animalistic grunts coming from Wu Yu’s cell. The pain that Wu Yu was suffering from burning his meridians was unimaginable.

The days passed one by one. Wu Yu’s jail cell emitted a bright, fiery light, and his grunts, moans and screams of pain did not cease. Through the ventilation hole, one could see Wu Yu’s meridians through his skin, each and every one of them shining and burning like stars. His body was virtually a fiery hot space packed full of bright dazzling stars! As he pierced through more and more meridians, the jail cell shined brighter and brighter and the temperature got hotter and hotter, to the point that the metal gate that locked him within his cell started to melt.

After a total of 130 days, Wu Yu finally pierced through all the meridians within his body. He had finally reached the 6th Heavenly Stage “Piercing Meridians” of the Body Forging Phase. Currently, all of his meridians within his body shined as bright as the sun in the darkness of the cell, all jam-packed together like a cluster of stars. Even though they were tiny, the light that they radiated was undoubtedly brilliantly effulgent, such that the metal walls of the cell were all seared red. His eyes, especially, gleamed with a golden radiance so sharp that it could pierce through metal.

Also, the “𠄎” tattooed on his back was even more prominent, and emitted heat that could melt iron to sludge. It was as if it contained a crazed, angry monkey that wanted to shake the heavens with its roar!

Weng! (sfx)

The moment Wu Yu clenched his hands into fists, the jail cell started to shudder and shake.

“The more I cultivate <<Indestructible Vajra Body>>, the more passionate and fiery my heart becomes. In my dream, I thought I was a violent monkey who wanted to destroy and smash everything within his sight.”

“My current strength is now greatly above that of a normal 6th Heavenly Stage expert. They have the power of 100 battlehorses, while I have the power of over 800! Even normal 8th Heavenly Stage martial artists had only the power of 500 battlehorses...”

“Don’t talk about 7th Heavenly Stage Experts. Even 8th Heavenly Stage “Tuotai” experts are not my opponent.”

Wu Yu was still young, so the success and gain in power made him incredibly joyous and excited. However, after thinking of Situ Bright and his unmatched genius, as well as Hao Tian Shangxian from the Capital of East Yue Wu, Wu Yu calmed himself down; he still had a long way to go before he could even think of defeating or killing them in a direct confrontation.

“The 7th stage of the <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> is <<Visualise the Monkey in the Heart>>”

“And the 7th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase is known as the ‘Ni

Shen' Stage. Reaching the 'Ni Shen' stage would compact thy mindpower and strengthen one's spirit. Thou's heart and soul will merge together, and through that merge thy will becomes even more firm and unwavering. Thou's attacks will be more accurate, causing thy's battle ability to greatly increase, as one will be able to perfectly control their body. The 'Ni Shen' stage helps to create a solid foundation and prepare one for Qi Condensing."

Wu Yu was not planning on resting.

"The cultivational method of <<Visualize the Monkey in the Heart>> is to visualize a monkey?"

At this point, Wu Yu realised that, as per his guesses, <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> had something to do with monkeys. Visualizing the monkey as depicted and described in <<Visualize the Monkey in the Heart>>, Wu Yu tried to construct it within his mind. Slowly, slowly, the image of a monkey started to form!

"<<Indestructible Vajra Body>>! Once fully cultivated, the world is thine's apple; Thou can charge into the 8000 Heavens and break into Hell and its 10,000 layers! Bronze skull and Metal bones, a body like gold, even the weapons of Gods cannot injure thee; Heaven's tribulations, stand to a side, because whether in the Heavens or on the Earth, thy's body will be undying and everlasting!"

"I am Heavenly Celestial Domain's Qitian Big Saint, Nirvana Celestial Domain's Battle Victory Buddha! Fated one, inherit my legacy, rebel against the heavens, and raze those who stand in your way!"

The moment Wu Yu thought of the domineering, overwhelming way Qitian Big Saint spoke, something penetrated his defences and entered his mind. It assaulted and pounded him, and at the same time, the monkey within his heart started to get clearer and clearer.

"That's a peerless monkey king, with a phoenix engraved purple gold crown and golden shining armor! Standing upon a silk lotus above the clouds, his right hand holds the Ruyi Jingu Bang! With hot, passionate blood, he rampages around heaven. He fights his way from heaven to hell, subjugates those who stand in his way, and causes Buddhas, Celestials, Ghosts, and Daemons to cry out in fear!"

A voice boomed within his mind. Fusing with the previous sentences spoken by Qitian Big Saint, the monkey finally formed within Wu Yu's heart. It was a peerless monkey enshrouded in searing flames wearing a mighty golden crown, dressed in dazzling golden armor, pitch-black boots and carrying a towering, imposing staff! His bright gold eyes could see through lies and walls... nothing could escape its grasp! Not even daemons! The blood-red cape that fluttered in the wind behind him seemed to cover the earth like a cloud of blood!

“So this is the monkey! The monkey in the heart!”

Wu Yu's mind and soul was overwhelmed by the monkey king. Attacked by a splitting headache the moment he finally managed to visualise it clearly, it was obvious his spirit was not strong enough to withstand it. He had to visualise the monkey again and again, so that his mind, his spirit would become stronger, which would in turn allow him to compact his mindpower and reach the 7th Heavenly Stage!

Boom!

His head would explode in pain every time he tried to visualise the monkey king, but he would not stop. He could not stop. He needed power. Power!

“I was reborn from the ashes because of this mysterious and powerful legacy. I'd be wasting Heaven's generous gift to me if I do not withstand and endure till the end!”

The fuckers that had wronged him back in the Capital were still living happily and carefreely; if Wu Yu did not kill them, he would live his life in regret and agony!

Therefore, unceasing, unremitting screams, shrieks and grunts of pain could be heard from Wu Yu's jail cell once again. The old brig warden Elder shook his head and gave a wry smile.

“This Wu Yu sure is a crazy young man. Cultivation is cultivation, not a game of how long you can scream for.”

“But risking his life to gain power is commendable. However, Situ Bright has already condensed his Qi and become a Core Disciple; if that Wu Yu knew about this, I'm sure he'd piss his pants in terror.”

In the blink of an eye, 200 days had passed.

As of now, the monkey king had fully formed; Wu Yu knew the monkey king so well that he could tell how much hair the it had on its body. Hard work truly does not let people down, as, after 200 days of constantly visualising the monkey king, Wu Yu had finally managed to withstand the mighty aura that it released. No longer did visualising it give him a splitting headache. Even though he could not see it or touch it, he knew that his spirit was getting stronger and stronger, and had taken on the shape of the monkey king.

“Finally! 7th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, complete!”

“Normal disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect would compact their mindpower with the <<Chasing Stars Spirit Technique>>. After reaching the 7th Heavenly Stage, they would have the power of around 500 battlehorses. However, I, after cultivating <<Visualize the Monkey in the Heart>> to compact my mindpower and reach the 7th Heavenly Stage have strength rivalling 1500 battlehorses!”

“Normal 9th Heavenly Stage martial artists only have the power of 1000 battlehorses. And normal 10th Heavenly Stage martial artists have the power of 2000 battlehorses. In other words, the distance between me and Situ Bright isn’t so great now. Equal in power, I have a chance of defeating him head on.”

“Life sure is marvelous. Back when I was living in the Capital, my dream was to reach the 10th Heavenly Stage of Martial Arts and possess the strength of 2000 battlehorses. And look at me now! I’ve nearly got the strength to rival that of a 10th Heavenly Stage martial artist! Never in my life did I actually expect this dream to come true...”

And like that, the one year of imprisonment was finally over.

The door of the jail cell opened, and sunlight flooded in, dousing Wu Yu like a wave for the first time in a year. He relaxed under its warm embrace – *Ah... this wonderful feeling, I’ve nearly forgotten how comfortable the sunlight can be....*

TL Note – the spirit and the mind are basically the same thing. But the spirit and the soul are two completely different things. Get it? Fuck, now I’m confused too.

Chapter 21: Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique

Chapter 21! Finally!

Edited by: KradoK

Repentance Mountain.

Clouds drifted about dreamily in the sky, and Celestial Mist permeated the air. At times, the wind would sweep down the mountain, causing the leaves and branches of the trees in the mountain forest to rattle and rustle. Sunlight pierced through the sea of clouds, illuminating the mountain range below in a golden light, making the earth seem like it was blanketed by a golden carpet.

Not very far away, rooted on a cliff was a Pine Tree, old but supple, cloaked in a vibrant green. Under the tree a white dress fluttered in the wind, and long black hair shined with a glossy sheen. It was Su Yanli, beautiful and flawless.

Sakura-red lips, creamy, milky skin, and watery eyes, she was an exquisite piece of art that only belonged in Heaven.

“Sister Su.” Wu Yu could not believe that Su Yanli was waiting for him outside the jail. Happiness gushed throughout him.

“Congratulations! Welcome back!” Su Yanli gave him a rare smile. Wu Yu, who’d been trapped in darkness for a year, was so moved by Su Yanli’s smile that he was stunned for a second.

“Wu Yu, wake up.” Su Yanli said lightly, unashamed by Wu Yu’s staring, causing him to blush in embarrassment. Although she might become his **Apprentice Sister*** in the future, he wanted to refrain from offending her.

“Repentance Mountain’s quite far away from your Heaven Gazing Mountain, so I purposely sent a Celestial Crane over today for your convenience. Let’s go.”

By Su Yanli’s side were two tall and mighty Celestial Cranes.

“Right.”

After climbing onto his Celestial Crane, they took off into the clouds. Wu Yu really wanted to know what had happened over the past year, but before he could ask, Su Yanli said: "Situ Bright successfully condensed his Qi more than half a year ago, and has been selected by the Sect Protector to become her disciple. He has waited for this day for a very long time."

It seemed like she came collect him today not only because she was worried that Heaven Gazing Mountain was too far away, but also because she was worried about his safety.

"Wu Yu, I cannot protect you all the time." Su Yanli looked at him from atop her Celestial Crane, eyes shining and glinting.

"I understand, I can protect myself." Wu Yu gave a faint smile in return. The news about Situ Bright didn't really shock or surprise him, as it was within his expectations. His calmness, and the changes that took place within his mind and body appeased Su Yanli's worries.

"It seems like I've underestimated you. After all, you have worked hard for a year." Su Yanli nodded her head in agreement.

However, what Wu Yu wanted to do was not only protect himself, but also....

.....

The highest point of Heaven Gazing Mountain, the Heaven Gazing Podium. A place like the Heaven's Cry Podium, disciples of Heaven Gazing Mountain would gather there during their free time to drink wine, duel with each other and generally explore the path of cultivation.

Outer Disciples were still mortals, so they could not live without basic necessities, therefore "Rain Hearing Tower" was one of the most popular places within the mountain.

Delicious and exotic foods from all around the continent were donated to the tower by mortals for Celestials to eat for free.

Sitting on a seat by the window side in Rain Hearing Tower was a girl in an azure robe. Still young, but well on her way into puberty, she was Qing Mang all right.

The other customers within the restaurant were mostly other disciples from

Heaven Gazing Mountain, and the majority of those disciples were new disciples who'd been initiated into the Sect at the same time as Wu Yu. Zhao Danlong and Ju Huo were among them, but they were not seated anywhere near Qing Mang. Occasionally, they would look at her with eyes of respect, then look away.

Qing Mang was currently looking out of her window impatiently, little mouth raised into a pout, and sat right opposite her was a drab, middle-aged man with a long, unkempt beard. His eyes were muddy and turbid, but at times it would glint with a sinister light, sizing up Qing Mang's body whilst she wasn't looking. Wine goblet in his right hand, the middle-aged man drank out of it whilst giving Qing Mang words of compliment.

"Qing Mang, you sure are remarkable. You've only been initiated into the Sect for one year, but you've already reached the 8th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase. Look at Zhao Danlong and Ju Huo... you've already left them behind in the dust!" The middle-aged man laughed. One could tell that he wanted Qing Mang's favour from his facial expression.

"That bastard!" Zhao Danlong and his companions were angered by his words, but did not have the courage to step up and confront him. He was an old disciple of Heaven Gazing Mountain who had great influence within the mountain. Over the past year, Zhao Danlong and the other new initiates had been bullied a great deal. This middle-aged man, who'd been initiated into the Sect for more than 40 years, was one of the main bullies who made their lives a living hell. A 9th Heavenly Stage "Xianbian" expert, he was so strong that there was nothing the new disciples could do but endure and withstand the bullying.

The middle-aged man had an incredibly notorious reputation within the Sect. A paedophile, he liked young girls, so Qing Mang was harassed by him lots over the past year. However, she did not have the courage to speak out for herself, to fight back, so there was nothing she could do but endure the harassment. Even though Qing Mang had a real Celestial backing her, she was a stubborn girl, so she did not want to give trouble to the Celestial. If she did not have anybody strong backing her, she would've have already been raped by him.

"Yu Huaishan, I don't want to talk to you." Qing Mang originally came to Rain Hearing Tower to relax, but was unlucky enough to meet the middle-aged man.

“Don’t be like that. Come on, talk with brother!” Yu Huaishan replied slovenly. He had already reached the 9th Heavenly Stage, so there was nothing Qing Mang could do but put up with him.

Stared at with predatory eyes, Qing Mang got up to leave, but upon noticing she was surrounded by Yu Huaishan’s lackeys, she sat back down on her chair. Anger bubbled throughout her, and she glared at Yu Huaishan with fiery eyes.

“My little Qing Mang, that’s right. Keep brother company for a while... why leave so soon?” Yu Huaishan smiled so wretchedly that the other disciples within the restaurant wanted to slap him in the face.

Noticing the awkward atmosphere within Rain Hearing Tower, he laughed once again, then looked out the windowsill: “Why are you sitting beside the window today? Ooohh, I know now! Today’s the day that that Wu Yu, who killed two of the Situ brothers last year on Heaven’s Cry Mountain, will be released from jail, right?”

“Qing Mang, you’re waiting for him, right? He’s the one who stole the number 1 spot from you after all.” Yu Huaishan looked at the young girl before him with sinister eyes.

Qing Mang did not bother replying. Upon noticing that she wasn’t speaking, Yu Huaishan laughed: “It is undeniable, though, that this Wu Yu is extremely lucky. But unfortunately for him, Situ Bright that monster has condensed his Qi already, and has become a disciple of the Sect Protector. Whether its talent, status, or power, Wu Yu cannot match him. If Wu Yu was smart, he’d lock himself inside his prison cell, and if he dares to come out, I’d say he won’t live for more than 3 days.”

“Brother Yu, I think you’re overestimating him. I say he’d only live for a day, no, half a day. Reportedly, Situ Bright has been waiting for this day for the past year.”

The crowd burst into laughter. After all, Wu Yu was a joke, and Situ Bright was a cultivating genius. Everybody was looking forward to how long Wu Yu would be able to survive for after being released from jail.

Qing Mang’s body shook in anger. Even though she hadn’t known Wu Yu for long, she knew deeply what type of person he was.

“Situ Bright does not have the strength nor power to kill him. Wu Yu’s stronger than me!” Qing Mang slammed the table with her hand then stood up, breathing heavily in fury.

“I lost to him one year ago, and I’m here waiting for him today because I want a rematch, to see if he has improved like me over the past year. So scram, stop bothering me.”

After saying that, she grasped hold of her sword and jumped off from Rain Hearing Tower’s third floor window.

“Qing Mang’s so cute when she’s angry.” Yu Huaishan and his cronies stuck their heads out the window, laughing loudly.

At that moment, two loud Celestial Crane cries came from the sky. Wu Yu and Su Yanli had finally returned! Su Yanli did not want to get off her Celestial Crane, so she gave Wu Yu a book embroidered with gold in midair. “This is a Best Grade Martial Technique that Master wants you to learn, so when you have spare time, cultivate it. It is similar to the sword technique you used before, but this technique is stronger and much more profound.”

Wu Yu went crazy from happiness. <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>> was no longer profound nor powerful enough to cater to his strength and needs, so he needed a new Martial Technique. Thankfully Feng Xue Ya had realised this problem, and bestowed upon him a more powerful Martial Art.

Even though a High Grade Martial Technique was nothing to Feng Xue Ya, it was very important to Wu Yu, because a Best Grade Martial Technique was as precious as his Daemon Slaying Sword!

“<<Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique>>.” The five words on the cover of the book were incredibly overbearing, 5 coiled dragons ready to strike. Indeed, it was similar to <<Slaying Whales in the East Sea>>.

“I have to go on a **retreat*** to cultivate, so keep safe. I’m looking forward to the day when you’ll become my Apprentice Brother.” After giving Wu Yu the book, Su Yanli left on her Celestial Crane. Before long, her elegant, graceful body disappeared into the clouds.

She was a quiet person, much like water, but at times she could be extremely

domineering and overbearing. Because of that, Su Yanli had numerous admirers and “worshippers”.

Yu Huaishan was one of them.

Of course, he was a pervert, so there was no beautiful girl in the Sect that he didn't covet and yearn for. But when it came to Su Yanli, he did not dare to look at her for more than a second, because he'd die without knowing how he died.

Wu Yu could be considered a legend in his own right. He'd been a disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect for more than one year, but today was the first day he could actually parade around the Sect freely and live in the Sect. Like a newbie, Wu Yu landed on Heaven Gazing Podium, and just as he put away the golden book, a azure-robed girl sprinted towards him.

“Qing Mang?”

“Wu Yu!” Wu Yu had not seen her for only a year, but she'd grown into a young lady already. She stood before him, angry yet happy expressions playing on her face. “Back when we'd just been initiated into the Sect, you promised me that you would become my friend. But then you got yourself imprisoned for one year, standing me up! I wanted a rematch, but I couldn't find you!”

“Qing Mang, nobody knows the future. I didn't want that to happen either.” Wu Yu gave a wry smile. Girls sure were weird.

“This won't do, you can't run away from me again! I want a rematch right now!” Qing Mang suddenly drew her sword and stared at him with widened eyes.

“We've just reunited, so I don't think it's good to point your blade at me...”

At that moment, many people jumped down from Rain Hearing Tower. The news that Qing Mang was challenging Wu Yu to a rematch spread like wildfire, attracting many disciples to come forth and spectate, including Yu Huaishan.

“Many people are underestimating you, but you're somebody who has beaten me before, so how can you be underestimated?! Take this!” Qing Mang shouted, attacking even before she'd finished her sentence.

“So that's why.” Wu Yu understood now why she was so eager to fight him. It

was not because she wanted to defeat and surpass him, but because she couldn't stand him being underestimated. Dueling him would showcase his abilities, silencing those who'd been talking trash about him.

To Qing Mang, friends were an incredibly important part of her life.

Whoosh!

Wu Yu retreated a few steps to avoid her incoming attack.

"It's been a year since their first battle. Qing Mang is having a rematch with Wu Yu today, come quick if you want to spectate!"

"Wu Yu? Which one? Oh, is it the one who killed Situ Bright's brothers?"

"He's been released from jail?"

Many Outer Disciples who'd gone on a retreat to cultivate came out to see Wu Yu in action. Many of them knew of his name, but had never seen him in real life before.

Apprentice Sister* – You know how disciples within the same Sect call each other Brother or Sister, right? Well, I've added Apprentice because Wu Yu will study under the same Master as Su Yanli if he's successful in beating Situ Bright. This effectively changes their relationship, and I have to show the difference. Therefore, I added Apprentice in front of sister.

Retreat* – When cultivators lock themselves up to cultivate

Chapter 22: Drunken Sword

Chapter 22!

Edited by: KradoK

Very soon, Heaven Gazing Podium was crawling with people.

Many disciples of Heaven Gazing Mountain were extremely curious about Wu Yu. After all, his sudden rise in fame, the subsequent shocking incident he induced, and his resulting incarceration was incredibly mind-blowing to say the least.

Disciples from other mountains were also on scene, eager to take a look at the legendary figure who took the Blue Surge Mountain Range by storm.

Qing Mang's sword surged forward towards Wu Yu.

"Take this!"

After reaching the 8th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, Qing Mang felt like she'd been reborn with a more powerful body. She could now absorb and exhale large quantities of Spiritual Qi, and action of hers had a Celestial-esque feeling to it, ethereal, nebulous, ghostly...

"<<Thirty Feet of Azure Blood>>!"

Qing Mang's slashed and hacked and thrust with her sword, a flurry of action too fast for the eye to see, and her footwork was incredibly profound and light, as if she was riding the wind; sure enough, she had improved lots since their last fight. There was no doubt that her sword technique was a High Grade Martial Technique, or even a Top Grade Martial Technique.

Whoosh!

To the surprise of the spectating disciples, Qing Mang's azure sword released thirty feet of Sword Qi that sped towards Wu Yu like a whirlwind of blood, hungry for his flesh.

“Wu Yu’s going to lose!”

The crowd, from the start, did not believe Wu Yu would win against the young Qing Mang.

Yu Huaishan followed Qing Mang’s dainty, delicate body as she moved about with predatory, lustful eyes. Ah, young girls were best....

Ding!

All of a sudden, Qing Mang’s glossy, azure sword stopped moving a foot away from Wu Yu’s throat, blocked by something hard, something adamantine, something like metal.

“What?” The spectators widened their eyes surprise. Qing Mang channeled all her strength into her arms and tried to pull out her longsword but to no avail. Wu Yu had used his hand, no, just two fingers to stop her sword’s advance! Clamped in between his gold-like fingers, she could not draw it back out no matter how hard she tried. The crowd nearly collapsed in shock, not only because Wu Yu had stopped her attack, but also because he still looked calm and unruffled with one hand behind his back, as if he was just taking a walk in the park.

Although Wu Yu had only reached the 7th Heavenly Stage “Nishen” of the Body Forging Phase, <<Indestructible Vajra Body>> gave him the strength of 1500 battlehorses, something that he should not possess at his current Cultivational Stage, so even if Qing Mang was a 8th Heavenly Stage “Tuotai” expert, he could easily suppress her without expending any effort, as he had three times her strength.

“Release my sword!” Qing Mang pulled at her sword with all her might, mind blank in shock. She was hoping that Wu Yu would be stronger than her, but this....

Wu Yu released his hold on her sword upon hearing her request, but because Qing Mang was still trying to pull out her sword when he did that, she fell backwards. And just as she was about to hit the floor, Wu Yu grabbed hold of her flailing, outstretched arm, saving her from a dusty, painful landing.

The end.

Don't mention Wu Yu's overwhelming strength, even the speed he displayed when he stopped Qing Mang's sword's advance at the last second was enough to shock all the disciples of Heaven Gazing Mountain on scene.

It was quite obvious that Wu Yu had defeated Qing Mang with practically no effort at all. If the spectators could not understand that, they were not worthy of being a disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect.

Everybody on scene at Heaven Gazing Podium went silent from shock, and their faces went stiff (yes, literally) from embarrassment. The big battle they'd originally predicted would last for ages had ended too fast, too easily.

"Qing Mang, what do you think?" Wu Yu did not fight off to flaunt or show off his skills, but to fulfill her request. Qing Mang, who was just at a loss at what to say and think, finally woke up to look at Wu Yu with her mouth shaped in an O. "So I lost just like that? How is that even possible?"

"It is possible... there's too many people here. Let's talk somewhere else." Wu Yu looked around, and confirmed that of all the disciples in Heaven Gazing Mountain, only Qing Mang was somebody he felt he could talk to.

"Mnmn." Qing Mang also didn't like to be watched by so many people.

At that point, she already understood a lot about Wu Yu's power, so she was quite satisfied with herself. Over the past year, she'd been paying close attention to Wu Yu's fate, and based on his performance just now, she noticed that even though he'd only shown a bit of his power, he would be able to hold his own against Situ Bright.

"Wait!"

Somebody shouted with a deep voice. Wu Yu looked back to see a middle-aged man with messy hair and a messy beard walk out from the crowd of disciples. Because the middle-aged man liked to drink wine, his face was red, and because of his casually put on cloak, the wine stains on it, and the dirt caked on it, he looked especially dirty.

"This big brother, what do you want?" Wu Yu knew that he did not come in good grace. Right now, he was an Outer Disciple, so if that middle-aged man really was looking for trouble, he wouldn't have to forbear from picking up a

fight with him like before.

That middle-aged man was Yu Huaishan. Looking at the overbearing young man with golden eyes and the aura of a King, he laughed loudly on purpose: “Qing Mang is my woman. Did you receive my approval to take her away?”

Behind him was a group of similar-aged Outer Disciples. Shouting together in unison, they also jeered at Wu Yu: “Yeah, Wu Yu, you’ve just been released from prison, so why are you taking away our sister in law?”

“That’s called taking away somebody’s woman by force!”

“Hm?” Wu Yu had never seen somebody so shameless before. That Yu Huaishan was old enough to be Qing Mang’s grandfather!

Wu Yu surveyed his surroundings, and understood what was happening “This person is an Elder Disciple of Heaven Gazing Mountain, and because Elder Disciples are strong, domineering over and bullying normal disciples is a normal thing for them.”

Not everybody liked or could put up with Yu Huaishan and his crew – Zhao Danlong, for one, was somebody who hated him.

Of course, the person who hated him most was Qing Mang. Humiliated in public, her eyes shone red in anger, and her body shook in fury. Lifting the sword in her hand, she immediately charged towards him.

“Yu Huaishan, I’m going to tear your mouth apart today!”

The angrier she got, the funnier Yu Huaishan and his friends found her. Before long, they burst out into laughter.

“In actuality, he’s provoking Qing Mang to see my capabilities.” Wu Yu had seen through Yu Huaishan’s ploy, but even so, he charged in anyways. Pushing Qing Mang back, he instantly surpassed her. The Daemon Slaying Sword in his hands burst into golden coloured flames, and with a great leap that spanned 100 feet, Wu Yu slashed at Yu Huaishan’s head with the strength of 1500 battlehorses. Their earth rending clash had finally begun!

“Wow!”

Wu Yu’s attack was decisive, direct and unexpected.

Yu Huaishan himself was still deep in the middle of laughter, and did not expect that Wu Yu would attack him so suddenly, so all he could do was lift his sword to block Wu Yu's strike.

“They're actually going to fight!”

“Yu Huaishan cultivates the High Grade Martial Technique <<Drunken Sword>>, and has also reached the 9th Heavenly Stage “Xianbian” of the Body Forging Phase! There is no way in hell that Wu Yu has reached the 9th Heavenly Stage from the 5th Heavenly Stage in one year!” Many spectators thought as they watched Wu Yu barrage Yu Huaishan with slashes and thrusts.

However, this thought instantly disappeared!

All they could see and hear was a flash of golden light, and a big bang!

Yu Huaishan blocked Wu Yu's attack with his sword, but Wu Yu just had too much strength, so his sword was instantly cut in half, flying backwards to embed itself into Yu Huaishan's mouth, just centimeters away from his brain!

“Ahhhh!”

The pain was excruciating that he felt like he was going to die. Collapsed on the floor, it was as Qing Mang had said – Wu Yu had torn apart Yu Huaishan's mouth.

Snap!

Wu Yu stepped on him, then pricked his throat with his sword. He did not want to behead him, but only wanted him to feel the threat of death.

“Qing Mang is my friend, and she's only a little girl. If you continue to humiliate or speak nonsense about her, I'll chop off your head just like that.”

Each and every word Wu Yu uttered was like a needle that pierced its way into Yu Huaishan's flesh, making him shiver and shudder in fright.

“Yes, yes....” Today was going to be a day that Yu Huaishan would never forget throughout the course of his life.

His brothers and colleagues behind him did not have the courage to come forward and fight Wu Yu. Who were they kidding, even Yu Huaishan who was a 9th Heavenly Stage expert could not withstand a single blow from him. It would

only be suicide if they stepped up to the plate.

Maybe it was at that moment that they finally knew how Wu Yu continuously killed 5 people on Heaven's Cry Mountain. And most importantly, the Sect Leader had appeared to vouch for him!

To the crowd, even how Wu Yu walked was incredibly terrifying. After all, he was a demon who destroyed Yu Huaishan in one strike!

"Let's go."

Leading the dumbfounded Qing Mang away from the podium, they disappeared from sight, and returned to the disciple's residence area. Back then he was originally supposed to live here, but the incident that happened a year ago got him incarcerated in jail.

"Wu Yu, I helped find 10 or so servants to take care of your residence while you were gone." Qing Mang said.

She was in an incredibly joyous mood, because Yu Huaishan had finally been taken care of!

"Thank you, Qing Mang."

"No worries, you helped me out today, so we're even. Wu Yu, what Cultivational Stage are you at?"

On their way to the residence area, Qing Mang had repeated this question numerous times, because she was just too curious.

And at the same time, she was worried, because his true opponent was many times stronger than Yu Huaishan.

In the blink of an eye, evening had descended upon the Sect. Wu Yu had already sent Qing Mang back home. Looking at the beautiful night sky, he was sure that news of today's incident had already reached Situ Bright's ears by now.

"The Sect Leader will also know of my progress over the past year."

Wu Yu was not afraid of Situ Bright, because he desired, he lusted over opportunities to challenge himself, to the point that he could already see the scene of him defeating Situ Bright in a direct confrontation.

At that moment, he would truly, truly shock everybody in the whole of the Sword to Heaven Sect!

“And then I will become the Sect Leader’s 5th Disciple!”

This was what Wu Yu desired the most.

It was not only because the Sect Leader was powerful, but also because he could give him more cultivational resources.

Most importantly, it was because the Sect Leader was his saviour; without him, he wouldn’t be alive. The Sect Leader had already saved his life two times! Wu Yu viewed him as his biological father just like Sun Wudao.

Because of Wu Yu’s release from jail, the Sword to Heaven Sect erupted into an uproar.

But Wu Yu did not care, and was not afraid of what was to come. In the darkness of the night sky, he hopped onto his Celestial Crane and flew over numerous mountains to land near Sun Wudao’s grave on Yan Li Mountain.

“Uncle Sun, I’ve returned after one year to keep you company.”

Next Chapter>>

Chapter 23 – Glazed Asgard

Translated by Sunyancai

Blue Surge Mountain Range was vast and boundless, among which “Heavenly Mountain” was the tallest peak.

On the Heavenly mountain, there was the “Heavenly Asgard”, serving as the main core of the Sword to Heaven Sect. The Sect Leader Feng Xue Ya lived in there and commanded all the inheritance and major events of the Sword to Heaven Sect.

Heavenly Mountain has a towering height of thousands of miles that thrust straight into the sky.

However, there was yet another mountain among Blue Surge Mountain Range, which could almost match with the peak. That mountain was the “Snow Glazing Mountain”.

Even though “Snow Glazing Mountain” was located in Blue Surge Mountain Range as well, it was quite unique. Because of its top was covered with snow throughout the year, the whole mountain was like a sapphire gem plugged inside the Blue Surge Mountain Range. It looked crystal clear from afar.

Snow Glazing Mountain was the most beautiful place in the Sword to Heaven Sect. Of course normal disciples and elders were prohibited to go inside.

On the top of Snow Glazing Mountain, there was Glazed Asgard, which was the cultivating place and residence of the Sect Protector ‘Lan Hua Yun’, where he would deal with major events of the Sword to Heaven Sect. The Glazed Asgard was stunningly beautiful, like a pearl on the snow. It’s said to be carved by a natural priceless treasure gemstone.

Glazed Asgard was hidden in colorful clouds.

At that time, a group of people walked down the Glazed Asgard, among which there was the fourteen-year-old Situ Bright. Situ Bright was now taller. Although

only a year has passed, he now seemed like a well-groomed young man, especially when he gathered his Spiritual Qi. Xian Qi would surround his body, so in the eyes of normal people, there was just no difference between him and a young Celestial from heaven.

His pale blue eyes sparkled with faint flickers of lightning. One could get stunned just from looking at them.

“Fifth Brother is really a rare talent in this world. You only cultivated for one year and mastered ‘Thunder Controlling Skill’ after you achieved Spiritual Qi. Now you are literally above everyone in Martial Cultivation since you mastered a Dao skill” A sage-like man said.

“Bright thanks Third Brother’s guidance for the achievements I’ve made so far.” Situ Bright was very humble. His tone and manner pleased everyone and they would at the same time privately admire the limitless future of Situ Bright.

“It’s all because of your own efforts.”

There were a lot jollification, since a few of the direct disciples of the Sect Protector exchanged compliments.

“Bright, did Master ask you to compete for the ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’ position, and have the sect send you to govern Mortal Celestial Kingdom?” Asked the Third Brother.

“How did you know about it, Senior Brother?” This was some of the information that Situ Bright hadn’t told the Third Brother when Lan Hua Yun talked with him privately.

The four of them all began to laugh.

“That’s so cute of you, Junior Brother. I’ll just be honest with you. In fact, all of us have served as the Kingdom Supervisor after we became one of Master’s disciples. Even though being a Kingdom Supervisor means that one shall leave the sect for some time and experience the normal world, it’s a very beneficial thing. After all, the mortal world has a lot of cultivation resources, yet mortal people cannot recognize celestial items. So eventually all of those treasures goes into the Kingdom Supervisor hands. During our service as a Kingdom Supervisor, each and every one of us had gained a lot.”

“As is known to all, the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor is a lucrative position. Also, it is the only chance that one could be free and get some air in the outside. You could never imagine, in the mortal world, how much we are respected by those mortals. In their perspective we are the rulers of the world. ‘Imperial Protector Shangxian’ they call us. Even if, we ever wanted a imperial concubine, they would happily deliver her to us without any compliant. Just because they are too weak!”

Suddenly, several men tacitly burst out laughing.

“So that’s it...It seems that I have to become a Celestial Kingdom Supervisor.” Situ Bright came from the mortal world and he knew for sure that a lot of good things were still buried and ignored there.

“Apparently I still have some time before the start of the election, for the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor position. During this period of time I shall let Wu Yu have a taste of death.”

Lightning sparked in Situ Bright’s eyes as he looked murderous. That was a thorn in his heart, and he would never rest as long as it’s there.

“Today, that Wu Yu will be released from prison. But it’s just that we don’t know if he dares to show his face!”

In the early evening, Situ Bright went back to his “Proud Thunder Mountain”. This was a gift from Lan Hua Yun herself, and no worse than Su Yanli’s Yan Li Mountain.

Since Situ Bright did not want anyone to enter his “Proud Thunder Palace”, it was always dark inside. As he stepped into the empty hall, someone walked out from the darkness.

“Ye Guyu.” Situ Bright looked up at the girl who was almost five inches taller than him. She had an excellent figure and was very tall. That black tight suit was made from some animal’s skin and was tightly wrapped on her body, exposing her amazing figure, which made her look even more appealing, and the curves on her hot body, made her even a more stunning sexy beauty.

Even worse was that she also had a delicate face. So coquettish that one could hardly keep himself in control.

However, regardless of her hot stature, her eyes were cold as ice, as if there were thousands of blades and swords hidden inside. One glance could make others feel absolutely terrified.

“Finally you came back, Situ Bright.” Ye Guyu said with no expression. Yet her expressionless face would make any men even more desired to conquer her.

But, Situ Bright seemed not interested, and he asked directly, “What have you heard?”

“Today, Wu Yu got out of prison and returned to Heaven Gazing Mountain. It’s said that he had beaten Qing Mang, who achieved the 8th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase, first; and then Yu Huaishan, who achieved 9th Heavenly Stage of the Body Forging Phase. What’s more, he basically won by using a single strike.” Ye Guyu stared at Situ Bright’s eyes as she described, as if she was seeking traces of fear or surprise in his eyes.

Unexpectedly, Situ Bright burst out into laughter, and said, “He’s really messing around. I assume that he must have cultivated hard in order to beat me.” Then, he raised his head to look at Ye Guyu, and said flatly, “Just as agreed before. You kill him for me, and his Spiritual Qi Bead is yours. I’ll help you condense your Spiritual Qi, and you must kill him tonight.”

“Why are you in such a hurry?” Ye Guyu smiled coldly.

“Impatient.”

“Fine, then I’ll bring his head for you, in my bag.”

Ye Guyu walked past him. Her back was really charming with her curvy body, her long hair falling on her rounded butt. Situ Bright turned back and stared at her, which made Yu Guyu smile in her heart, “Such a mature young man, but you still can’t resist my temptation?”

In the Sword to Heaven Sect, there seemed to be no one who could see her, as if not interested at all.

“Here, take this. It’s the copy of ‘Golden Flame Spell.’ My Master personally gave it to me. If you cannot match him, use this to kill him.” Said Situ Bright.

“Eh?” Ye Guyu thought that he finally could not resist, but it wasn’t the case. She must admit that she was quite surprised that he was giving her the Golden Flame Spell. She reminded him, “Such a precious thing could obviously only come from your place. What if everyone suspect’s you afterwards?”

Situ Bright sneered, “So what if they suspect me? Dead is dead. No one can touch me as long as my Master is still here.”

“Then why don’t you do it yourself?”

“Because, I do not want to disgrace my Dao sword. I’ve already thought it through, my pursuit of the Dao cannot be interfered by my two waste of a brothers. My sword would only be swung when faced with stronger opponent, Su Yanli, for example! This lucky servant does not deserve to be killed by me!”

Situ Bright wanted to laugh, for he had changed a lot during this year. Lan Hua Yun had properly guided him, but perhaps the people in the Sword to Heaven Sect would really think that he really hated Wu Yu. However, Wu Yu was merely a pain in his ass, and all he needed to do was to eliminate him.

“You are too proud of yourself.” Ye Guyu shook her head, and turned around, and disappeared in the darkness.

She realized that she had underestimated Situ Bright. He was not a child and in fact he was far too mature for his age. She wanted to seduce him with her body, and make him obsessed with her, so as to control or even manipulate him. However, based on today’s encounter, he was so strong-minded with his pursuit for the Dao, that he would never have any lustful ideas about her.

“So I might as well kill that Wu Yu and get his Spiritual Qi Bead.”

“I’m only one step away from achieving my Spiritual Qi. Killing that servant is as easy as a piece of cake, anyway.”

.....

Around the cottage located at the back side of Yan Li Mountain, there were mostly bushes instead of tall trees, surrounding a graveyard. Not-so-bright moonlight poured down and there was vaguely a ghostly feeling.

Wu Yu made three prostrations and nine kowtows, and then placed liquor and snacks for Sun Wudao.

“Uncle Sun, you’ve changed my life, yet I could not provide you with a happy old age.”

This perhaps would be the lifelong unforgettable regret inside Wu Yu’s heart. But for now, he could only share his thoughts with Sun Wudao, and Sun Wudao only.

“I will definitely cherish everything you gave me. And I’ll let you witness every step I take on my road to a brighter future.”

“Now since my punishment is over, I will continue to cultivate with all my attention. I shall work hard until I can return to East Wu and take everything that belonged to me. I won’t rest until I take it all back!”

Wu Kingdom in East Yue is somewhere Wu Yu must return to.

A year was already long enough.

Haotian Shangxian, Concubine Xi, Wan Qing! How could he forget his hatred?

“I wonder how Sister Wu You’s doing lately...”

In Wu’s capital, she was the one that Wu Yu cared about the most. He could not forget his sister, as well as how much she took care of him.

“It’s getting too emotional.”

Wu Yu stood up, and golden light flashed in his eyes. He dug out the [Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique] that Su Yanli gave him today, and began to work on it seriously. Thus Sun Wudao might personally see him making progress, and he would feel comfort deep down in the earth.

“‘Slaying Whales in the East Sea’ was merely a mid-grade Martial technique. The move was easy and without any meaning, which could not match up with my cultivation anymore. However, this [Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique] claims to be able to slay a dragon, and is indeed more aggressive. Top-Grade Martial Technique, how can it be bad!”

Thinking about this, he began to really put himself into it. At first glance, he found it very suitable for himself. As expected, it was really carefully chosen by Sect Leader especially for him.

“Cultivating with Master’s guidance is undoubtedly different. Now I can avoid

many deviations.”

Wu Yu immersed himself into the Martial Technique, when totally focused, he pulled out his Daemon Slaying Sword and began to practice in front of the grave. It had been a while since he ever encountered such a complicated and advanced Martial Technique, so he kind of lost himself for some time.

“This [Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique] was created by the Sect Leader himself. No wonder it is so overbearing and aggressive. The moves contain the energy and power to carve mountains and rivers, and the momentum to enter the seas and slay dragons. The tactics are not hard but more important is the spiritual will, with endless courage.”

“That would perfectly suit with this indestructible body of mine. Actually, it’s like that it is especially made for me!”

The more Wu Yu read and practiced, as he drilled, the more obsessed he became. Encountering this kind of Martial Technique, which seemed like it especially existed for him, his mastering speed and leveling was faster than ever!

In the past, when Wu Yu was learning [Slaying Whales in the East Sea] in East Wu, he visited the East Sea on purpose and had practiced his sword on the waves for over a year before he could master the [Slaying Whales in the East Sea]. However, today, he could do some tricks overnight.

Late that night, a gust of murderous Qi woke Wu Yu up as he was fully indulged in the Martial Technique!

Chapter 24 – Golden Flames Sweep

Translated by Qiling Lin

“Who!”

Although Wu Yu was playing with the sword and was lost in practice, he was still sensitive enough to perceive the very tiny movement made by others.

“You found me.”

In the forest, there was a graceful woman as tall as Wu Yu. Her figure was very seductive, appropriately plump while as slender as a snake. Her long and toned legs were even longer than Wu Yu’s. She covered herself with a smooth animal skin, making her even more sexy. Although she was veiled in black, just from her shape you can tell how bewitching her body was.

“I thought Situ Bright would come in person, but instead he sent you here.”

Wu Yu felt her bewitchment, but he held tightly to his heart, knowing that the more the temptation, the more the danger.

“You can only live for ten breaths now.” The woman carried a short black sword, whose materials and power were in no way inferior to the Demon Slaying Sword. Moreover, from her posture and aura, Wu Yu realized that she was much more powerful than Yu Huaishan. She was definitely at the 10th Heavenly Stage!

That stage was Wu Yu’s dream, his life time pursuit.

But now, she was the one who wanted to kill Wu Yu.

And, to kill him within ten breaths.

Whoosh!

A second later, she moved. Her short black sword in the dark night was like the tongue of a poisonous snake, hissing quickly, flickering with a cold and sharp attack!

“Guyu Eight Thrust!”

This woman was a natural born killer, excellent at killing quickly. She moved like a poisonous snake, quickly circling Wu Yu. It was hard to keep track of her. Her sword could rush to Wu Yu’s vulnerable parts like eyes, throat and heart at any time!

“That was fierce!”

There was no doubt that she wanted him die today.

She was more powerful than him, at the stage of two thousand of war horses.

Extremely dangerous!

Ding!

Leaves were flying. In a tiny gap, a vague black light was heading violently towards Wu Yu! This was a deadly threat!

“Dung!”

He swept his sword, hitting right against her short sword. Wu Yu was blown away by the force, knocking down a tree and falling on the ground in the dust like a drowned mouse.

“He!”

In the darkness of the night, the woman started to attack Wu Yu again. Her strikes were complicated and weird. Her poisonous snake-like moves and powerful strength were a real difficulty for Wu Yu!

“I cannot let her suppress me anymore”.

Wu Yu escaped from the shocking danger for a few seconds. She was deadly and cold-blooded, almost piercing Wu Yu’s eyes and throat! Under this situation, Wu Yu was not able to use his skills.

“Three breaths left!” She was very arrogant. Her gloomy and cold voice came from every direction. At this time, she was much swifter and even more violent, so that Wu Yu could not track her position.

He would definitely die if the situation did not change.

This was a real enemy.

But what Wu Yu cultivated was the Indestructible Vajra Body. Not only his body, but also his mind changed after meditation. Now, facing such a violent enemy, he was never frightened, instead, he was even more determined to fight with her. In his imagination, Wu Yu found himself being a violent monkey in fire.

“Visualise the Monkey in the Heart.”

In his mind, he visualized the ‘Monkey’– the mighty monkey king sat in his soul and mind, and stabilized his soul. When his soul became incomparably powerful, even forming a pressure for his enemy. Wu Yu started fighting back!

“Golden Flames Sweep”

He fought back with the ‘Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique’ which he was pondering. Although this was just the first sword, it was the swordsmanship invented by Feng Xue Ya, it would never be simple!

When the Demon Slaying Sword swept like a golden burning fire, it pierced the darkness. At the time when the woman rushed to Wu Yu. His body integrated with his mind, erupted with power suddenly!

Ding!

The woman’s short black sword was parried away by Wu Yu.

She was too confident, so she had been careless. She had to step back quickly. Her beautiful and slender body was flickering among Wu Yu’s sword strikes. But Wu Yu was visualising the monkey in the heart. He caught this opportunity, attacked forward while she lost her weapon. When a long golden sword swept, numerous flames lit the dark night. Wu Yu found a chance when the woman was shocked.

Dang!

The Daemon Slaying Sword cut the woman at her snake-like waist.

“Ouch!”

She groaned, rolling down on the ground.

Actually, Wu Yu was able to completely cut her waist off. But he believed she

must be the disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect. The minimum punishment for killing a person the last time was imprisonment for a year. If he killed once more, he would get in huge trouble. So he turned away the sharp edge, attacking her with the back of sword.

Even so, she was still injured, she held her waist as she fell on the ground, and could not straighten herself.

Wu Yu raised her veil. She had a seductive beauty as he had expected. In this mortal celestial kingdom, her appearance, and slender body must have sewed much discord between two kingdoms.

It was with luck that he defeated her this time. Thanks to her carelessness and 'Visualise the Monkey in the Heart', which strengthened Wu Yu's power.

"Go away. Next time, ask Situ Bright to come by himself."

Wu Yu wanted to continue practicing the sword. Fighting in front of Sun Wudao's tomb would disturb the dead's soul.

The woman bit her red lips. She was not willing to go but apparently she was unable to fight. She barely stood up, picked up her sword, and looked at Wu Yu bitterly, blaming, "What a spiteful slash! Don't you have a tender heart for ladies?"

"Get out." Wu Yu stared at her.

"Heng." Although she failed, she became even more sharp. Her displeased eyes were very seductive.

Then, when she turned back to leave, she took out a golden charm from behind Wu Yu. The charm had complicated bloody prints with a ball of flame in the center.

"Go to hell!"

The woman sneered, suddenly turned back, and tore off that 'Golden Flame Spell', throwing at Wu Yu. Although it was just a paper charm, it flew as a concealed weapon, exploding in front of Wu Yu instantly!

After the explosion, a palm-sized golden fireball with roaring flames came into being, with a horrible power to destroy, instantly rushing toward Wu Yu!

After all, Wu Ju was new to the Celestial Sect, he knew little about the recondite charm. He did not pay attention to her as he thought he almost broke her spine, and she had lost her power already.

He would never have expected a thing like Golden Flame Spell!

How did he become so inattentive!

In a second, after the Golden Flame Spell exploded, wild and virulent flames swept all over Wu Yu. Things like his hair and clothes were burnt off instantly. Then the power of the Golden Flame Spell penetrated into his skin, reaching his insides, spreading to his internal organs, vessels, meridians, blood and flesh.

“Wu Yu, the Golden Flame Spell will burn your dirty blood and flesh into ash!”

The woman changed her face, delightedly giggling. She watched how Wu Yu was swallowed by the fire. Even though it was a grim death, but she did not even frown once.

“You offended Situ Bright. You deserve it. You should feel lucky to be killed by a precious Golden Flame Spell.”

Hoo Hoo Hoo...

The fire was burning ragingly, wilder and wilder, even burning the Daemon Slaying Sword. As long as he did not reach the Qi Condensing Phase, once he was attacked by Golden Flame Spell, he would be gone up in smoke within three breaths.

In the light of the fire, the woman's evilly beautiful face became even more seductive.

“Poor.”

She did not want to watch, and thought there would be only ashes. She turned back and

left.

Hoo!

Suddenly, a surge of fire flames roared, glaringly, but disappeared instantly. The blazing forest was back to darkness. Then the fire flame was gone,

unreasonably fast.

The woman was shocked. She turned back only to find an uninjured Wu Yu. Except that his hair and brows were gone, his skin and limbs were safe and sound, even more stronger now. His moves contained more power and mightiness. Peculiarly, there were no pupils in his eyes, only a burning fire!

“How!...”

As if the woman had met the most unbelievable thing in this world—the Golden Flame Spell was swallowed...

But she didn't have much time to be stunned. A golden light flashed and a steel finger hit her neck, lifting her up! The finger was not only solid, but also extremely hot, as hot as a piece of burning steel, blackening her tender flesh and vessels instantly!

From Wu Yu's flame eyes, the woman saw one word, death!

There was no doubt that she would die.

She never expected that she would die, however, now her life was controlled by Wu Yu. At this moment, an idea occurred to her. She saved her energy, and did not continued to struggle, but began to tear off her clothes, revealing her amazing body in front of Wu Yu who also lost his clothes. She struggled, “Wu, Wu Yu, I am yours now. You can do whatever you want to me. Please don't kill me!”

Her body was like glass in the moonlight, sending out a tempting lustre. She became even more seductive to Wu Yu since they were all naked. Ye Guyu was confident that her being naked, that a surrender, would dazzle everyone, including Situ Bright.

Crack.

Wu Yu broke her neck.

[STH Ch 23](#)

[STH Ch 25](#)



Chapter 25 – Celestial Kingdom Supervisor

Translated by Qiling Lin

Several rivers went through the Blue Surge Mountain Range.

In the rivers, there were fishes, prawns and demon beasts. All servant disciples from the Sword to Heaven Sect caught fishes and prawns, and fed Celestial Cranes, and other spiritual beasts in the rivers.

In the night, Wu Yu came to the bank of the billowing rivers. In the dim light of the night, he threw a black thing into the river. Until next dawn, it would have already left the Blue Surge Mountain Range along with the rapids. More likely, it would be eaten by the fishes and prawns.

“Even a beautiful face and white bones can not escape death.”

That black thing was Ye Guyu.

“I spared your life, but you still wanted me to die. I am done with utmost patience and magnanimity.”

Ye Guyu brought her own destruction. Otherwise, Wu Yu would not kill people easily.

“Yan Li Mountain is so big. Big Sister Su seems to be in closed door cultivation. I guess no one knows where she is.”

In fact, in this large Sword to Heaven Sect, disciples competed with each other and died in revenge. There were countless bodies in the rivers.

Under the cover of darkness, Wu Yu quickly returned to the Heaven Gazing Mountain, and went back to the cultivating room. He locked the room, stayed there, tore off his clothes and finally saw that the fire of Golden Flame Spell was still burning inside his body. His internal organs, vessels, meridians, blood and flesh were in raging flames. He had to suppress his pain for a slim chance of survival.

“Indestructible Vajra Body is the iron body, and the flame body. It is integrated

with gold and fire. If it was not the Golden Flame Spell, but Cold Ice Spell, Storm Spell, Thunder Spell or any other spells, I must have died within three breaths. My indestructible iron body was refined by sun and earthly fire, this flame was less lethal to me.”

This was why he could survive today.

But, the the Golden Flame Spell’s aggressive power was still burning inside his body. If he did not remove it, he would be burnt into smoke someday.

There were flaming raging all over his body. Even when he sat on the ground, the stone was blackened. He was not able to wear clothes.

“What should I do?”

His initial thought was to ask Su Yanli for help, maybe she could help him.

But if he was able to solve this by himself, then he did not want to bother others.

“The 8th layer of the first stage of the Indestructible Vajra Body, ‘Tuotai’ (previously mentioned as tuotai), is [Wise Stone Body]. For the [Wise Stone Body], I need to cultivate in fire for 49 days, endure burning pain, and integrate the previously refined body, meridians, tendons, bones and organs. I will be reborn with a new body and reach the ‘Wise Stone Body!’”

Now, Wu Yu had a bold idea.

“I was wondering where to find a fire that is able to burn me for 49 days. This Golden Flame Spell is like maggots on my bones, burning my body. This is a chance to cultivate the [Wise Stone Body]!”

He was determined, and then calmed down to ponder the 8th layer of the Indestructible Vajra Body. He had almost achieved enlightenment of the first thousand words. Once he cultivated Wise Stone Body, he had only ‘Xianbian’ and ‘Tongshen’ left.

After he tried, he found that the Golden Flame Spell could really work.

“Situ Minglang, you put in a lot of effort to kill me with this precious Golden Flame Spell. But you didn’t imagine that it could help me in reaching a higher level!”

Wu Yu calmed down, focused his mind, and started to refine according to the 'Wise Stone Body' technique, integrating every part of his body, and burning ragingly from the head to the toes.

This progress was not world-shaking, but there was long burning pain day after day. Compared to previous stages, this stage needed more willpower. It became harder each day. Wu Yu had to Visualise the Monkey in the Heart, and calm down his soul and mind. This made him feel better.

This lonely and painful process lasted for 49 days. Wu Yu completed every part of the 'Wise Stone Body', and finally absorbed the flames of the Golden Flames Spell. At this time, his body was reborn, achieving the 'Wise Stone Body'!

Every corner of the cultivating room was filled with filthy air. On the ground, there were a lot of dirty things excreted from Wu Yu's body, which were toxins and waste from food for over ten years. Now, he had a spotless pure golden body. Only with this newborn body, can he set foot on the Celestial Dao

When he left the cultivation room, the sunlight streamed over his newborn skin, shining with a pale golden dazzling light, which made the '卍' on his back glisten even more. Although it had been only 49 days, his hair and brows were grown again. This was the result of his body being reborn. His new hairs looked soft and tender, but they were as tough as iron and not easy to be burn.

Bathing under the sunlight, this young man yelled loudly at the heaven and earth, shaking numerous mountains and forests! A surge of masculinity burst out and spread far far away.

"Perfect!"

After achieving the 'Wise Stone Body', his power was stronger! When Wu Yu clenched his fists, he could feel power surging all over his body. He realized his progress was at an incredible stage.

"The normal 10th Heavenly Stage cultivator has the strength of 2000 horses. But I am only at 8th stage of 'Tuotai', I already have the strength of 3000 horses. My power is equal to thousands upon thousands of horses and soldiers. I guess, I can fight with masters at Qi Condensing Phase soon."

This progress was scary even to himself.

“Others already find it unbelievable that I defeated Yu Huaishan. I don’t know whether they know that I killed that woman at the 10th Heavenly Stage Martial Artist.”

Actually, the fact that Wu Yu had been cultivating for 49 days without being disturbed had shown that no one cared about her death.

One year ago, Wu Yu dared not imagine having the strength of 3000 horses. The higher the cultivation, the more incredible the Indestructible Vajra Body was.

He calmed down his mind. In the next days, he would focus on the ‘Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique’, trying his best to increase his strength. Wu Yu dreamed of Wu You sometimes at night. He wanted to return as soon as possible. He thought, if he completed the first stage of the Indestructible Vajra Body, he could go back.

One day, Su Yanli came to visit him when Wu Yu was practicing his sword skills. She watched him for quite a while and found his eyes were filled with Spiritual Qi. She did not say any word until Wu Yu stopped his practice. She said, “You really rose from the ashes. Although you are older than Situ Minglang, but you have made much more progress than he did. No doubt that Master will surely accept you as his student.”

Wu Yu did not expect that Su Yanli, who had a very high status in the Sword to Heaven Sect, would speak so highly of him.

“Am I able to defeat Situ Minglang?” Wu Yu was not sure how strong he would be after he condensed his Qi.

But Su Yanli shook her head, saying, “Using horses to calculate strength is the rule of Mortals. When you move on to the the Celestial Dao, the rules are different. After all the Daoist’s power is incomparable to the mortals’. But, Situ Minglang just condensed his Qi. He has about 5000 horse strength, two times of yours.”

Wu Yu became clear now. Situ Minglang had learned Daoism. Wu Yu was not his opponent yet. He would definitely lose in the battle.

“I think I need to achieve one more stage so that I can fight with him.” Wu Yu thought.

“Wu Yu, since you are still mortal, you cannot be too prideful at the Mortal Body Forging Phase. Because the key to Celestial Cultivation is not your body, but your Spiritual Power. When you reach the Qi Condensing Phase, your power will depend on your Spiritual Power.”

Wu Yu nodded. He would've been overly prideful if Su Yanli had not reminded him. Daoists concentrated mostly on Spiritual Power, while body strength was valued by mortal cultivators.

“But, the entire Indestructible Vajra Body has 10,000 words. It will be extremely powerful after I achieve it.”

Next, Su Yanli gave him some advice, broadening his horizons. He really appreciated Su Yanli. She cherished talents so she cared for him so much.

“I heard a disciple named Ye Guyu is missing. She was close to Situ Minglang. Did you kill her?” After talking, Su Yanli stared at Wu Yu with her beautiful and bright eyes. She was at a high realm. Wu Yu was not able to lie in front of her.

“Yes.”

Su Yanli nodded, but did not criticize him. She had seen many conflicts among celestial disciples.

“She is gone. No one will care about her. But Situ Minglang did not come for you, not because he forgot his resentment, but because he is preparing for the selection of ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’. After he wins the selection, you will still be in danger.”

Wu Yu knew that Su Yanli would not protect him from Situ Minglang. He wanted to become the student of the Master with his own ability. Situ Minglang, however, was just a test for him. If he defeated Situ Minglang, he would win. If not, he would die. There were numerous disciples in the Sword to Heaven Sect. The Master would never favor him without reason.

Wu Yu was actually interested in the title of Celestial Kingdom Supervisor. Su Yanli told him some duties of this position.

“Us disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect cannot leave the Blue Surge Mountain Range without the elders’ permission. Becoming an Imperial Protector Shangxian in the mortal kingdoms is probably the only chance to leave.” Su Yanli said in indifference.

Imperial Protector Shangxian!

This news was a bomb for Wu Yu!

Hao Tian Shangxian was a ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’, for a long time.

“Big Sister Su, I wonder whether East Yue Wu is included in these kingdoms?” Wu Yu was anxious.

The fact is, the Sword to Heaven Sect has an agreement with the nearby ‘Zhongyuan Daoist Sect’ that each of them would supervise a few kingdoms for ten years. In the last ten years, it was the ‘Zhongyuan Daoist Sect’ who supervised these mortal kingdoms. During the supervising period, all output from these kingdoms belonged to the ‘Zhongyuan Daoist Sect’.

Now ten years had passed. It was the Sword to Heaven Sect turn to send their disciples to supervise these kingdoms.

‘South Mountain Zhao Kingdom, and East Yue Wu, a total of six kingdoms will be supervised by our Sword to Heaven Sect.’ Su Yanli did not know about Wu Yu’s past. She did not care about his mortal history.

But this was important to Wu Yu. Hao Tian Shangxian was probably going back to his Sect. The only chance for Wu Yu to meet Hao Tian Shangxian was to become the new Imperial Protector Shangxian of East Yue Wu.

[STH Ch 24](#)

[STH Ch 26](#)

Chapter 26 – Zhongyuan Daoist Sect

Translated by Qiling Lin

“Senior sister Su, I want to be the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor of East Yue Wu Kingdom.” Wu Yu clarified the situation, knowing that Hao Tian Shangxian would leave after he took up the position. So he was determined.

But Su Yanli shook her head, and said, “I am afraid you cannot. According to the rules, only Core Disciples at Qi Condensing Phase can be Celestial Kingdom Supervisors. Basically, all of the competitors are those who just finished the process of Qi condensing. You have not condensed your Qi yet, which makes you ineligible.”

Wu Yu did not care about the rules. He briefly told her his history in East Yue Wu, and said seriously, “Senior sister Su, this is extremely important to me. If I succeed, I will remember this great favor deeply in my heart.”

Su Yanli was a disciple of the the Sect Leader. Although these were the rules, Wu Yu believed that this was easy for her as she had a high status.

Su Yanli understood that Wu Yu was determined and had a blood feud. She said, “The organizer for the competition of the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor will be Elder Mu Ge, he is loyal to my Master and we have a good relationship. As long as you have strength to compete with those of Qi Condensation Phase, you are qualified to compete. But, I need to make two points clear.”

“Please, senior sister Su.” This was a big issue, so Wu Yu listened attentively.

“First: Situ Minglang will attend the competition too. If he knows you are there, he will pull strings to arrange a fight between you and him. At that time fights are cruel, even if he kills you at the stage he has an excuse. If you have decided to compete, you need to prepare for this life-and-death battle between you and him. Only one of you can be the ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’.”

Wu Yu was not surprised, for this would not stop him from going back to East Yue Wu kingdom.

Su Yanli became more serious. She said very slowly, “The second is more important. Once you become the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor of East Yue Wu, and arrive at East Yue Wu’s capital, the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor of ‘Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect’ will provoke you. This is not new. Each ten-year-shift will cause conflicts in resource competition. But since you are going back for revenge, you need to keep in mind to never let others know that you killed him. After all, you are going there on behalf of ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’, while he represents ‘Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect’. Once ‘Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect’ finds that our disciple killed their disciple, this will turn into a sect-to-sect conflict. Once the conflict becomes serious, we will have to sacrifice you for our whole sect. Do you understand?”

Wu Yu was born in the royal court, he knew these kind of conflicts very well. What Su Yanli said made sense. If he went back as a disciple of ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’, he will never kill Hao Tian Shangxian in public, lest he cause conflict between the two sects.

Wu Yu had read the Atlas of Dongsheng Divine Continent, which wrote most about the nearby ‘Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect’, the biggest competitor of ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’. These two sects were incompatible. Compared to ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’, ‘Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect’ was more ‘orthodox’. In the people’s eyes they became known as those that follow the path of justice, while the ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’ had become a crooked and evil sect.

Wu Yu did not expect Hao Tian Shangxian to have such a background, it was really annoying.

“Are you sure you’ll take part in the competition?” Su Yanli had made the disadvantages clear, Wu Yu needed some serious consideration. But, no matter how difficult it was, going back to East Yue Wu kingdom was the thing he wanted most.

“I am sure.”

“Alright, I will take you to the Celestial Battle Podium. You take care of your own life and death.”

Celestial Battle Podium was beyond the Celestial Ascendance Podium. It was a much more superb and bigger place, it was where disciples from ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’ would fight.

“Great!”

Wu Yu’s eyes were raging with fire for the upcoming battles.

While he was still thinking about the things that had happened in East Yue Wu, Su Yanli, in her white dress, drifted away. Celestial Cranes were dancing in the sky as her tender figure left a beautiful trajectory and soon disappeared.

“Senior sister Su hoped I could stay in the Blue Surge Mountain Range and develop myself safely. But since I choose this struggling road, I need to make it to the end.”

Sometimes she was serious, sometimes stiff and even indifferent. Nevertheless, Wu Yu remembered the many times she helped him. She recognized his potential and personality.

.....

“Fifth Brother, the names of the candidates for the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor position have been released. This year is different, six kingdoms and twelve candidates. Therefore, the rule is simple: six groups with each two people, two man showdown, the winner will be the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor.” That day, a disciple of Lan Hua Yun came to the Proud Thunder Peak.

“Twelve? It was earlier said to be eleven people?” Situ Minglang walked quickly from the cultivating room. There seemed to be wind and thunder in his movements, which allowed him to walk at a rapid speed. A single step could take him far away, he walked a distance of hundred steps in just a second.

That disciple laughed, saying, “Interestingly, Wu Yu is on the list. Everyone was talking about it, After all he has not condensed his Qi yet. Why was he qualified? He was following the Sect Leader. Normally, we should stand out to oppose that. But I think you won’t do that, will you?”

Situ Minglang laughed out, saying, “Fuck opposing, we will one hundred percent support it. Now that he comes willingly for death, why do we bother to kick him out? I was wondering when I would have the chance to kill him before I left the sect. After all, he was hiding in the Heaven Gazing Mountain, being a coward. When we are in the Celestial Battle Podium, he has no chance to

escape. Third Brother, I need to find Master and ask her to put Wu Yu and me in the same group.

“Don’t worry, I told Master this before. She has arranged it already.”

“Great.” Situ Minglang smiled a bit, he was eager to cultivate. Recently, he sent Ye Guyu to kill Wu Yu but it turned out that Ye Guyu didn’t come back. Wu Yu was hiding all the time, no one knew what had happened to her. He also had not found a chance to finish Wu Yu.

This was a thorn in his heart, which kept annoying him and affecting his cultivation. Now, killing and competition merged into one, which released his mind so he could finally concentrate on his cultivation.

“That is a good thing, but also a bit odd. You said that he seems to have killed Ye Guyu? His speed is a little bit scary.” That disciple puzzlingly said.

“I heard he had some improvements. He is quite good at the Body Forging Phase. But this is a battle at Qi Condensing Phase, who cares about body strength?” Situ Minglang sneered. He seemed to know Wu Yu very well. So he understood his boldness as well as his weakness.

Dao skills, were the overpowering nightmare for Wu Yu.

“I don’t want your cheap blood polluting my sword. However, you made me unable to focus; I will not hesitate to kill you now. A polluted sword should be washed clean in several days.”

Looking at the direction of the ‘Celestial Battle Podium’, Situ Minglang looked forward to the battle.

The list of candidates’ names did cause some dissatisfactions in the ‘Sword to Heaven Sect’. Although Wu Yu had big fame, people felt sick when they saw a rule broken for the second time.

First time, he killed five people and was only imprisoned.

Therefore, these days many core disciples, outer disciples and even servants were discussing about Wu Yu. They were wondering who this Wu Yu was. But Wu Yu had been cultivating in the Heaven Gazing Mountain and never showed

up.

In fact, Wu Yu knew he was not an opponent for Situ Minglang. Thus, in the last few days before the competition he wanted to reach the 9th stage of Mortal Body Forging —Xianbian.

The corresponding technique of the Indestructible Vajra Body was called the Celestial Monkey Transformation. Once he finished cultivating it, his body would become like the Celestial Monkey's holy body, which was more powerful in strength, speed, defense and recovery, compared to mortal bodies. However, it would cost more strength.

It was not easy to cultivate Celestial Monkey Transformation. Wu Yu had been pondering for a while, but he did not make any progress so far. He realized that something important was missing, but it was not mentioned in the Indestructible Vajra Body technique.

His body was mortal, Celestial Monkey Transformation required blood of monkeys to cultivate. Therefore, he was wondering whether he needed monkey's blood or other treasures to allow him to reach that stage.

This question had taken him quite a while of pondering. The battle date for the position of Celestial Kingdom Supervisor was getting closer, but he did not figure it out yet. He would definitely lose the competition, which made him totally upset.

“If I fail, I don't know when I can find a chance to kill Hao Tian Shangxian.”

Once he returned to the Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect, I will not have a chance for revenge.

The time running out, layers of stress, and boredom during cultivation gave him impulses to destroy the place.

“I forced myself on this road to ruin. I was overconfident of myself. Leading to today's temper, frustration, and inability of any improvement. If I go to fight with Situ Minglang in this condition, It will be no different from committing suicide.”

Bang! Bang!

He clenched his fists, hitting the ground of the cultivating room. The ground was broken by him.

“Cultivating the Celestial Dao with this urgency, the fierce pressure is overwhelming. I underestimated the Celestial Dao, so I feel so stressed out now. From the past till now, there was no one that became a celestial in one step.”

On one hand he had an urgent need.

On the other, he was hindered by reality.

Both had annoyed him heavily.

“Wu Yu, what are you doing!” Suddenly, Qing Mang’s clear voice appeared from the outside. Wu Yu was making too much noise, she was disturbed it.

“Qing Mang.” Wu Yu struggled a little bit in his heart, the flames in his eyes faded away. He tidied up his clothes, and went outside. Qing Mang was looking at him while complaining, “You are so noisy, I can’t fall asleep.”

“Sorry.” Wu Yu felt helpless.

“Do you still have no idea? Only several days left. If you don’t make any progress, then...” Qing Mang saw him being helpless and stopped being mad at him.

“Yeah.” It looks like Wu Yu had to fight with Situ Minglang with his current strength and see if he could get an edge.

“Do you need some treasures? Let’s go to the ‘Treasure Valley’. We can afford to buy something there.” Qing Mang advised.

[STH Ch 25](#)

[STH Ch 27](#)

Chapter 27 – Celestial Monkey Transformation

Translated by Qiling Lin

In the Treasure Valley, a relatively big valley in Blue Surge Mountain Range, there were many shops forming a trading center, which was as prosperous as the streets in East Yue Wu, the items that were sold here were all celestial treasures. Those who could afford to buy them are mostly core disciples, outer sect disciples like Wu Yu could only afford to buy common items.

It was said that the Treasure Valley was connected with rich mortal businessmen, disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect cooperated with those businessmen. They supplied while the disciples distributes. Among those shops, especially the larger ones were even connected with elders from the sect. Resources were the priority for cultivators. The more resources they have, the more powerful they become. For instance, Ye Guyu almost killed Wu Yu by using her Golden Flame Spell.

It was also the Golden Flame Spell that helped Wu Yu to accomplish the ‘Wise Stone Body’ technique.

Things such as the Demon Suppressing Sword and Qi Condensing Pill were all resources.

It’s worth saying that at the moment Wu Yu only had the Demon Suppressing Sword and the Qi Condensing Pill. Apart from these, he does not even have half a liang (1 liang = 50 grams) of gold. Things that were given by the sect to normal disciples monthly were useless, they were consumed quickly.

It seemed that the sect focused only on training and developing the core disciples.

Important people’s disciples like Situ Minglang or Su Yanli were granted much more resources by their Masters.

As for Wu Yu, he was poor and blank right now.

“I am not going, I don’t have any money.”

The mortal celestial kingdoms used silver and gold for trading, while in the Sword to Heaven Sect they only used gold, no one wanted silver. Some celestials used gold for trading with mortal businessmen and asked them to do favours. It was also said that core disciples at higher stages even used Qi Condensing Pills for trading, a Qi Condensing Pill could exchange up to 500 kilograms of golds!

Or even more than 1000 kilograms.

They counted gold in kilograms.

“I have money. Whatever you want, I will buy it for you as long as I can afford it.”

Qing Mang was very generous. In this Heaven Gazing Mountain, Wu Yu concentrated only on cultivation. Therefore, Qing Mang was his only friend.

Wu Yu knew her intention was to give him a chance to win, hence he did not reject.

They rode their celestial cranes. Flying across half the Blue Surge Mountain Range, through several celestial areas and finally arrived at the Treasure Valley.

Wu Yu also flew over the Heavenly and Snow Glazing Mountains! For now he was not qualified to enter these forbidden areas.

Looking down from the heavens, the Treasure Valley was prosperous with brilliant lights blazing everywhere. Plenty of treasures were available for trading every day, so this was the favourite place for many disciples. Even if they didn't have money in their pockets, they would visit just to see these treasures.

A few small shops were managed by servants while other important ones were managed by the core disciples, It was said that even elders of the sect were here to maintain stability. If someone planned to steal or rob, they would end up losing their lives.

“So many treasures! I want to buy them all!” Qing Mang landed, gave the celestial crane to the servant, and wandered around the Treasure Valley with Wu Yu. A wide range of beautiful treasures were gleaming everywhere.

All kinds of martial arts, even the best of the best are seem to be ordinary here. There were Daoist techniques sold in the larger-sized shops in exchange for

money. Plus, plenty of weapons, even magic weapons, Celestial Spirit Herbs that were grown in Celestial Mountains, precious heavenly stones nurtured in the earth, and spells drawn by powerful Daoist cultivators. The Treasure Valley had everything that one expected to find.

Besides these, there were a lot of marvelous items that even sellers didn't know how to name them, but they were allowed to be sold. After all, in this vast Dongsheng Divine Continent, there were countless things that people didn't know yet.

Qing Mang opened her eyes wide lest she miss a single piece of treasure. She did not buy anything, but she encouraged Wu Yu to look around. In fact, Wu Yu had been here a few times. However, he did not stay long and had to leave soon because of his empty pocket.

At this time, Qing Mang saw a long sword. A highest grade weapon which costed 500 jin (1 Jin = 1/2 kilogram) of gold, she hesitated for a while but finally gave up.

Because it was too expensive, Qing Mang had to bring back more gold if she wanted to buy it.

“This weapon was almost as powerful as the Demon Suppressing Sword, but only costs 500 jin of gold. If it was sold in mortal markets, it must have been auctioned for a price of over 10,000 jin of gold. As for the Qi Condensing Pill, it was not useful for mortals. Therefore, it was worthless.”

After all celestials and mortals really do value different things.

“Qing Mang, why don't you buy it?” After all, she really liked this ‘Blue Wandering Sword’.

“No, it's too ugly.” Said Qing Mang looking at the ‘Blue Wandering Sword’ reluctantly. Wu Yu knew she could not afford to buy it, so he just chose to walk around with her. He came with her just to get some fresh air.

“That man, is Wu Yu.”

“The arrangement of the ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’ competition has come

out, he is going to fight with Situ Minglang. Not surprising at all.”

“Why is he so special to get the favor of the master?”

When Wu Yu was walking, there were actually many people watching him and talking about him.

This was not the first time. In fact, every time Wu Yu went out, there was someone wanting to challenge him. But for those outer sect disciples under Qi Condensing stage, none of them was able to take a single strike from Wu Yu.

“Qi condensing means moving on to the Celestial Dao, reaching the sky in a single jump. They say Wu Yu was strong in mortal cultivations, but when it comes to the Dao, I am afraid he is not able to survive from even a single strike.”

“Wait and see, Situ Minglang is impressive. Wu Yu killed his two senior brothers, he was lucky to live until now. They say his participation is a plot. After all, if he wanted to live for a little longer, he had to sign for the competition so that Situ Minglang didn’t kill him before they fought for the position of the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor. In this way, he will live for a little longer. When the competition starts, he can just surrender. Situ Minglang then has to leave the sect for some time, at that time he has no chance to kill Wu Yu.”

“No wonder, I was thinking where he got the courage to fight with Situ Minglang. It turns out that he was stalling for time to live, really smart!”

“He is smart, But this makes me sick.”

Listening to these whispers, Wu Yu had to admire their imagination. They came up with plots that didn’t even exist.

Treasure Valley was too big. They walked around for half a day, but didn’t explore even one tenth of it.

Wu Yu became the focus wherever he went, he became quite annoyed by all that undesired attention.

“Wu Yu, shall we go back?”

Qing Mang found there was nothing to buy, she did not want Wu Yu to face so much ridicule and contempt.

“Alright.”

They turned back. When they were walking, Wu Yu was still pondering about the 'Celestial Monkey Transformation'. Suddenly, he was attracted by an item on a carpet sold by an outer sect disciple.

"What's this?" Wu Yu pointed at it, it was a fruit with a light fragrance. Apparently, it was celestial, but not of good grade, never mind a Spirit grade. Its peculiar appearance was like a monkey's head, with nose and eyes like shapes.

"This is Monkey-head fruit, can nourish the body, can help accelerate the recovery after injuries and it is a tonic to the flesh. But it is more beneficial to monkeys than to humans. Plus, there are only few Monkey-head fruits. It is rare to see them on sale. The price, as far as I can recall, is not very expensive, 30 jin at most."

Somehow, Wu Yu felt like he needed this ordinary-looking Monkey-head fruit. Not because it could heal the body after injuries, but the underlying relation between monkeys and this fruit that ordinary people were not able to sense.

This fruit grew in the shape of a monkey head, it must be quirky.

"Can you buy it for me?" Wu Yu wanted to bring it back and take a look.

"Of course!" Qing Mang was delighted. No matter if it helps or not, at least she could do something for Wu Yu. She was taking some money out while asking the disciple about the price. He was an outer sect disciple, tall and strong. Although he was sitting, he looked as tall as Qing Mang standing.

"1000 jin of gold."

The outer sect disciple looked up at Qing Mang with a false smile.

Qing Mang was shocked, almost dropped her gold down to the ground. 30 jin of gold was enough, she did not take much gold out.

"Excuse me? It is just a Monkey-head fruit, it costs 30 jin of gold at most. Why do you want 1000 jin?" Qing Mang was annoyed.

"I said it is worth 1000 jin." That disciple took a tough stance, while looking at Wu Yu and Qing Mang with a hint of hostility in his eyes.

Qing Mang was driven mad. She felt he was teasing her, she wanted to ask others to judge. Wu Yu told her to calm down, asking, "Are you from Heaven's

Cry Peak?”

The disciple was surprised, saying, “How did you know?”

Wu Yu’s eyes were glowing, saying, “I killed people from Heaven’s Cry Peak of course I know.”

That disciple was from Heaven’s Cry Peak and he knew Wu Yu. Since Wu Yu wanted to buy something from him, he would not sell. He was teasing them that’s why he set the price at 1000 jin of gold.”

Honestly, Wu Yu really wanted that Monkey-head fruit in his heart. However, the problem was that the disciple was provoking them. This was troublesome, if the other side knew Wu Yu desired the fruit so much they would become even more presumptuous.

Treasure Valley had its rules, Wu Yu could not take things by force.

“Qing Mang, can we find another Monkey-head fruit somewhere else in the Treasure Valley?”

“It is rare, but we can try!”

Since it was possible to find it somewhere else, Wu Yu did not want to tangle. He took Qing Mang back to the Treasure Valley, they looked around for half a day. They found over ten Monkey-head fruits, but it was strange, he did not get the same feeling as he did with the first one. Obviously, these Monkey-head fruits would not help him much.

“Only the first one was special?” Qing Mang was upset.

They went back to the tall and strong disciple. He saw them, he put on a grim face and sneered, “So? You have 1000 jin of gold?”

Qing Mang of course did not have this amount, and she did not want to give him so much gold either.

They had to leave first. Qing Mang said, “How about I ask someone to buy it.”

“Okay.”

Qing Mang had other friends, but not from the Heaven Gazing Mountain. After half a day, the friend came. He went to buy the fruit but soon returned in

frustration. He said, “The disciple took away the Monkey-head fruit, he did not want to sell it at all. He is smart, he must have found out the fruit is important to you.”

“We are in trouble now.”

The smarter he was, the more troublesome the situation was. He must have known the fruit was special when he first got it.

“I have to take it by force.”

That disciple has to be absent sometimes.

Wu Yu was watching him from secret places, but the disciple was there all the time. The deadly fight was coming soon, he could not waste time here anymore.

At this point unexpectedly, Situ Minglang showed up beside the disciple who was from Heaven’s Cry Peak.

[STH Ch 26](#)

[STH Ch 28](#)

Chapter 28 – Demon Monkey’s Drop Of Blood

Translated by Qiling Lin

“Wu Yu, that’s Situ Minglang.” Qing Mang feared this person. She shivered and hid behind Wu Yu when Situ Minglang appeared.

Wu Yu noticed his arrival. And the other side also knew he was nearby..

During the last year, Situ Minglang was the most popular person in the Blue Surge Mountain Range. He became the disciple of Lan Huayun. Even many core disciples, who were far more powerful than him, admired him very much, fawning over him and trying to draw him over to their side.

His appearance caused a sensation in the Treasure Valley. Many people turned their heads to see him, admiring and envying this young fiend. They talked about his prospect in secret.

“I believe someday Situ Minglang will become a Jindan, take over the position of Sect Protector or even the Sect Leader.

“Considering his shocking talent, it’s possible.”

Under the focus of everyone, this young man was in high and vigorous spirits, composed, and arrogant. He indeed had an exceptional aura. He did not care about the others gazes, and just said a word to the disciple. Then, that disciple quickly took out the Monkeyhead fruit and gave it to him.

Wu Yu narrowed his eyes. This time, he seemed to see a small animal bite mark on the fruit. It was this bite mark that appealed to his Indestructible Vajra Body.

After Situ Minglang got the Monkeyhead fruit, he sneered. Looking around with pale blue eyes. “Wu Yu, I know you are here. This is what you want, right? If so, show up.”

Everyone was holding their breath, looking around, and thinking that there will be some good drama to see before these two fought for the ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’.

“Wu Yu, don’t walk into his trap. He is going to humiliate you....” Qing Mang wanted to stop him, but Wu Yu was quicker than her. He stepped out, walking into the position which was five zhang (zhang, a unit of length = 3 1/3 metres) away from Situ Minglang. Everyone was watching him. Qing Mang, biting her lips, had to gather her courage to follow him.

“It’s been one year. I finally saw you today.” Situ Minglang’s eyes were gleaming with an ice-cold light. To Wu Yu’s surprise, his eyes did not show intense hatred now, just a faint killing intent. It looked like Situ Minglang grew more restrained.

Although everyone liked to compare Situ Minglang and Wu Yu, he actually only treated Wu Yu as game.

“They say you want this Monkeyhead fruit?” Situ Minglang held up the celestial fruit, looking at Wu Yu with a false smile, which should not belong to a fourteen-year-old teenager.

“That’s right.”

“Then I will give it to you.” Wu Yu had not expected Situ Minglang saying that. But he found out why very quickly. As Situ Minglang suddenly crushed the Monkeyhead fruit, threw it to the ground and stamped on it a few times. The crushed fruit was mixed with the soil and animal waste

“Feel free to take it.” Situ Minglang stepped backward, slightly smiled, and beckoned Wu Yu.

“Wow!”

His action made the crowd of lookers exclaim. It was so cruel. Not only did he destroy the thing Wu Yu desired, but also teased him bitterly. If Wu Yu didn’t do something, his momentum would be completely suppressed.

It was not good for the upcoming fight, either.

After all, momentum was also an important factor for competitions.

At that moment, everyone was curious how Wu Yu would react. Normally, if he didn’t defeat Situ Minglang, he would be definitely humiliated.

“Let’s leave!” Qing Mang came over, pulled Wu Yu’s arm and wanted to leave

with him. She was angry, but she knew this was not the right time to fight Situ Minglang. They had to swallow this humiliation today.

But Wu Yu didn't listen and took out his long and slim fingers, walked to less than two steps away from Situ Ming. In this position, he could almost feel Situ Mingslang's surging celestial strength, which felt like needles piercing his face.

“Hua!”

Surprisingly, Wu Yu, bent down, wrapped the soil-mixed residue well with a white cloth, and held it tightly in his arms. He did not have any facial expressions when he was doing that. He was not even fearful being so close to Situ Minglang. When he finished, he smiled thinly, saying, “Thank you Junior Situ for being generous. But this thing will be the very reason that you will be defeated. You will regret this. At that time, don't cry.”

After that, Wu Yu grinned manly, a sharp contrast to Situ Minglang's feminine tenderness. He did not want to stay there, or at least, not in front of Situ Minglang. He turned back, steadily walked to Qing Mang, and left with her without glancing back.

Qing Mang was so frightened that her heart jumped up her throat. She turned around frequently, worrying about Situ Minglang chasing and killing them. But every time she turned round, Situ Minglang hadn't moved. His blue eyes thundering faintly. Qing Mang could even hear the thunderstorm rolling, which crept her out.

In fact, everyone was anxious just now. Until Wu Yu left, Situ Minglang was filled with vengeance. All the onlookers stood gazing at one another, being at a loss.

“Situ Minglang did humiliate him. But he bowed his neck to accept the alms. This is just too....”

“But, since he dares to be so close to the enemy, he is really bold. It does make sense. If he is not bold, how could he dare to kill five people of the Heaven's Cry Peak.

“He was really shameless. Picking up the alms degradingly. What's the

difference between him and a dog? He really has no dignity!”

Although Wu Yu felt peaceful, others who had witnessed the scene just now believed that he had accepted Situ Minglang’s humiliation.

Probably only Situ Minglang himself did not feel even the slightest comfort of humiliating him. Instead, he felt gloomier. He felt a knot in his heart. He began to think that he didn’t want to mess with a lowly servant like Wu Yu anymore. As long as Wu Yu goes away, he could continue to pursue the Dao.

After all, there was a big gap between their statuses and talents.

However, every time he saw Wu Yu, rage and frenzy engulfed his reason. This time, he realized that his Dao pursuing heart was unstable. He still hated Wu Yu bitterly. He could not treat Wu Yu as an ant. Now he felt regretful that he hadn’t killed Wu Yu immediately, when he was released from prison.

Now, he had only one chance to kill him, at the Celestial Battle Podium.

“Meditation and contemplation. Master told me that my real opponent in the future must be a super talent of the Dongsheng Divine Continent. My pursuit of the dao will be hindered, if I go tit for a tat with an ant.

Situ Minglang had to repeat this in his mind to hypnotize himself.

When he finally cooled down, Wu Yu had already left. The Treasure Valley became lively again. A lot of people came to fawn over him, flattering him. Some, who wanted him to pull strings, would personally present treasures to Situ Minglang.

Wu Yu had returned to the cultivation room.

“What a disgrace for you. I...” Qing Mang’s face was red with anger. She believed that a cultivator can be killed but not humiliated. She could not understand why Wu Yu picked up the crushed Monkeyhead fruit.

“Qing Mang, no one is born as the number one in the world. I am a man among men. If I cannot swallow humiliation and bear a heavy load, I will not go far in this long celestial road.” What happened today was a small case for Wu Yu. Actually he did find out that Situ Minglang was indeed young through his core. His temper and heart went through few hardships. Although he was beyond

ordinary, he got enraged easily when provoked by Wu Yu.

“The fight at the Celestial Battle Podium, I don’t want to you to fail.” Qing Mang was a little emotional and spoke out her thoughts. This little girl recognized Wu Yu completely. The way she was being emotional somehow looked cute.

“Alright.”

Wu Yu said no more. He sent Qing Mang out with an excuse of closed-door cultivation.

He went back to the cultivation room as swift as the wind. After he isolated the cultivation room completely, he took out the white cloth, placed it on the ground carefully, flattened it out, and then opened it. The crushed fruit mixed with soil appeared.

“My ‘Celestial Monkey Transformation’ lacked an opportunity, a starting point. I thought there was no hope in the Blue Surge Mountain Range. But it turns out that it was Situ Minglang who gave this sacred thing to me in person.

At the Treasure Valley, Wu Yu did not feel any humiliation at all, but surprise and expectation. In his eyes, Situ Minglang was just a child whose madness knew no bounds.

Wu Yu picked out the fruit, put it on his palm, his started glowing with a hint of gold, and very small orifices appeared in his palm. Under his control, the palm became very red and then engulfed the fruit aggressively with golden flames, burning it.

“Fzzz, fzzz.”

In the golden flames, the fruit was quickly completely burned, becoming smoke, floating in the cultivation room with a faint fragrance. But what interested Wu Yu was a microscopic and hard-to-find drop of blood.

The mysterious drop of blood was like a living creature, running like a scalded cat in his palm. Occasionally, it became a wicked and wild monkey.

“This must be a demon monkey. Very powerful. Somehow it left a drop of blood in that bite mark. With fortune, I found it!”

Wu Yu was excited. This was very rare. He was extremely lucky to obtain the drop of blood after all what happened before!

“I must accomplish the Celestial Monkey Transformation with this drop of blood!”

“At that time, how will Situ Minglang feel, if he finds out that it was him who helped me to accomplish the Celestial Monkey Transformation?”

It wasn't difficult to guess what happened next, after some period where he suppressed his desires, Wu Yu started his closed-door cultivation.

And all the disciples in the Blue Surge Mountain Range seemed to wait for the upcoming match on the Celestial Battle Podium.

They said that the last battle was arranged to be Wu Yu vs Situ Minglang.

Note: We are changing the Celestial Monkey Body once more, but this time to Celestial Monkey Transformation, it turns out that he actually transforms into a monkey with in the future.

[STH Ch 27](#)

[STH Ch 29](#)

Chapter 29 – Mo Shishu

Translated by Qiling Lin

This day, the mountain range was cloudy and misty. The sea of clouds surged from the endless Western wilderness, like hundreds millions of armies marching towards the Eastern ocean across the Blue Surge Mountain Range.

At noon, the golden sunlight penetrated through the clouds, poured down like a light pillar. The Blue Surge Mountain Range looked as if shrouded in golden flames.

Among the hills and valleys, countless Celestial Cranes were dancing, a spectacular landscape of Celestial Dao in the heaven.

Today, the skyscraping Celestial Battle Podium was especially grand and magnificent!

The Celestial Battle Podium looked like a giant sword piercing towards the heaven in an oblique angle. The tip of the sword pointed east, overbearing and rebellious! There was no flat stage on the podium, every spot was extremely tilted. For ordinary disciples, it would be regarded to be great if they could stably stand there, not to mention fighting on the podium.

It was exactly because of this tilted surface that servant disciples, the utmost population in the Sword to Heaven Sect, were not able to watch the competition today. Those who wanted to watch should at least be at the seventh level of Mortal Body Forging Phase.

Because of this, Celestial Battle Podium was far more solemn than Celestial Ascendance Podium.

Celestial Cranes were not allowed to fly on the Celestial Battle Podium, therefore, the disciples could only go there on foot. In fact, they were slightly tired when they arrived at the podium.

Looking out from the vast Celestial Battle Podium, the crowded Celestial Daoist disciples were waiting for the competition between the 12 core disciples with

curiosity and hopefulness. For them, watching the core disciples fight was a rare opportunity.

Although Wu Yu was not a core disciple, but because besides his enmity, there was the one-year promise to Situ Minglang, and also his relationship in the struggle between the Sect Leader and the Sect Protector were really attracting. Therefore, spectators were more excited about their battle.

“Sect Protector Sovereign came!”

Those disciples who were noisy and talking loudly suddenly became quite. They all respectfully looked towards a beauty in a blue dress descending from the sky.

Although she was not young, she had no signs of aging and had a graceful and solemn temperament. Her faint makeup even made her more flawless.

When Lan Huayun landed, her surroundings changed slightly, it appeared as if a deep blue lake was behind her, She was like a lady who landed in a lake. Finally arrived above the heads of the crowd, and sat down on a gold-and-blue chair built with numerous swords.

It was the ‘Sword Throne’, an exclusive throne of the Sect Protector. Anyone, at least among the Sword to Heaven Sect, who dared to sit on it will be killed.

Beside Lan Huayun, there were many elders, who were all senior Celestial Daoists. They were people of significance in the sect, Wu Yu knew one of them, elder Mu Ge.

The elders, including Lan Huayun just sat and watched, while Mu Ge was the host of the ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’ competition.

Those small potatoes did not have seats, they had to stand around the central arena of the Celestial Battle Podium. Even figures like Su Yanli were among the crowd, but she was the closest to the location of the arena. There were no other disciples within 10 meters.

Normally, a ‘Celestial Kingdom Supervisor’ competition would not be so grand and solemn. The reason why Lan Huayun showed up in person was because of Situ Minglang. Her appearance made this competition unprecedented, immense and serious.

Surrounded by the crowd, Situ Minglang dressed in blue was talking cheerfully

with some disciples, they were all candidates and had a good relationship with him. They were flattering him, which made Situ Minglang more prideful. Besides, he was the focus of most of the crowd.

“Wu Yu.”

Situ Minglang looked around secretly, however he did not see Wu Yu.

“It’s really as they say, he did not have the intention to compete. He is afraid that I will kill him, therefore, he’s just stalling for time.” Thinking of this, Situ Minglang sneered deeply in his heart.

Because Wu Yu did not show up so far, many of the crowd had the same thought.

At this time, elder Mu Ge stood up and asked, “The competition will start soon, are the twelve candidates all here?”

People looked and found there were only ten candidates besides Situ Minglang, it was eleven in total.

“Wu Yu, is not here.”

Soon, many people answered. Their words contained contempt and dislike. Wu Yu’s absence today proved that some disciples’ guesses were right— he signed for the competition only because he was afraid Situ Minglang might kill him.

“Our Sword to Heaven Sect nurtured such a shameless person. I heard that a few days ago, he even picked up a Monkeyhead Fruit on the ground thrown by Situ Minglang.”

When people heard this, they booed and hissed from all directions. As disciples of the Celestial Dao, they felt ashamed because of his cowardly behavior.

“You don’t know much, they say Wu Yu crept between Situ Minglang’s legs to get the fruit. A useless Monkeyhead fruit crushed his backbone. Such a...”

Before that person finished his words, elder Mu Ge looked around, and spoke loudly to Su Yanli, “Yanli, you have good relation with Wu Yu. Go and get him, do not delay the competition.”

He certainly knew that Wu Yu was not afraid of death.

“Yes.” Su Yanli already planned to do so. This was a special day for Wu Yu, a final test from the Sect Leader, He had no reason not to come.

“No need.”

At this time, a loud sound came up from the crowd. They all turned back. A tall and strong young man quickly stepped into the Celestial Battle Podium like a cheetah. He looked slim, but also firm and fit.

When he came, the crowd was suppressed by his cold, sharp and golden eyes, all the disciples subconsciously stepped back to let him pass. Wu Yu quickly and smoothly came to Su Yanli side.

“It’s just been a few days, how come you grew so much taller?” Su Yanli’s beautiful eyes were deeply filled with shock, and her cherry-like lips were slightly open. Wu Yu had never seen her so surprised before.

When looking carefully, although Su Yanli was tall, Wu Yu was half a head taller than her. As for Situ Minglang, he could only reach to his chest.

“It’s due to my recent cultivation.” Wu Yu slightly smiled. His confident smile was like sunlight pouring through the clouds, showing a manly charm. His appearance made all those gossipers shut up their mouth, shamefully looking at each other.

“Wu Yu!” Situ Minglang gazed at Wu Yu with burning eyes. This was not a good sign, Situ Minglang was the focus of everyone’s attention. However, when Wu Yu came, he diverted all the attention, how dare he!

Instantly, his eyes were thundering with a storm. There were five fights before his, he could not wait any longer. The raging fire was burning in his heart no matter how hard he tried to suppress it.

“Minglang, He is just a lowly ant, but you are too angry. You may not deserve to be my disciple.” Lan Huayun’s words cooled down Situ Minglang’s heart. He finally suppressed the deep intention to kill Wu Yu, and went on talking cheerfully with others.

Elder Mu Ge then announced, “Since everyone is here, we don’t need to waste

any more time. First two candidates come out and compete, I don't want to call your names."

The exciting moment came! People finally did not pay any more attention to Wu Yu. Instead, they were full of anticipation to see the fights between core disciples! This moment, was a start of a fire storm!

Two young talents at Qi Condensing Phrase quickly leaped into the middle of the arena. Under the view of the crowd, they greeted each other, and then started fighting directly.

"Daoism, Magic weapons!"

It was actually the first time for Wu Yu to clearly see two special items of Qi Condensing Stage. Both disciples held a long sword, which was different from the Demon Suppressing Sword. Maybe the Daemon Suppressing Sword was sharper. But that long sword had the strength of the Celestial Dao, a huge advantage to the weapon wielder!

Besides, different magical weapons had different effects. According to 'The Atlas of Dongsheng Divine Continent', magical weapons could immobilize others, release poisonous smoke and have many other unbelievable effects.

As for the Dao, if released by spiritual power, it would become more formidable. For example, it will be able to direct wind, control thunder, drive fires, and so on. It had numerous powers, to use the Dao was truly celestial in the eyes of mortals.

"Little junior!" When Wu Yu was lost in watching the competition, someone suddenly patted him on his shoulder. This startled Wu Yu, he was very powerful now. Anyone who was able to sneak up on him without his attention, and pat his shoulder in silence must be very powerful.

If he had stabbed a sword through his heart, he would have died.

Wu Yu suddenly turned around, he found a scholarly looking man standing beside Su Yanli. He was wearing a black top hat and waving a folding fan. The fan had pictures of graceful and scantily dressed women. Looking closer, he was actually very handsome, he had a moustache, looking very serious, and in fact clever eyes that shone constantly—as smart as a fox.

At this time, this man was looking at Wu Yu up and down. He was amazed.

Su Yanli rolled her eyes, complaining, “Third Senior Bother, do not tease him, he is going to fight soon.”

That man stared at her, “How could I, I am here today to support this little junior brother.” His funny face was somehow gentle and kind.

Wu Yu knew the identity of this man. He was the third disciple of Feng Xueya, the Sect Leader and the senior brother of Su Yanli. In this way, he seemed more powerful than Su Yanli. Thankfully, he seemed to appreciate Wu Yu otherwise, he wouldn't call Wu Yu little junior brother before the competition finished.

“Little Junior Brother, I am the third disciple of Old Feng, Mo Shishu. You can call me Third Senior Brother.” Although his appearance was of a scholar, but he talked like a rogue.

“Mo Shishu (shishu=master's junior brother)? Third Senior Brother?” Wu Yu was confused. Shishu or senior brother?

“‘Shi’ in his name is the one from ‘Shiju shuji’ (poem and books). You always took advantage of others with your name. I will ask Sect Leader to change your name into Mo Shizhi (homophone of nephew).” Su Yanli was always indifferent, but she was more relaxed in front of Mo Shishu. They seemed to have a good relationship.

“Eh eh, little Junior Sister, don't make trouble. I surrender, I submit to your good grace, Okay? Right, you care so much about this little junior brother, be honest, do you want to be his sugar mama?”

Mo Shishu jestingly said while waving his folding fan.

“Are you asking for a beating!” Su Yanli had no patience with him. He was not like a senior brother at all.

At this time, listening to them fooling around, no one thought about the outcome on the arena. The first competition had finished, the first Celestial Kingdom Supervisor appeared. The fight between Wu Yu and Situ Minglang is drawing closer.

[STH Ch 28](#)

[STH Ch 30](#)



Chapter 30 – The Thunder Control Divine Skill

Translated by Qiling Lin

“How did Wu Yu become taller?” Qing Mang dared not stand close to Su Yanli or the other disciples of the Sect Leader. She had to stay far away with the disciples of Heaven Gazing Mountain. When she finally squeezed her way through the crowd, she was shocked seeing this scene. Her little mouth opened very wide, she could swallow an egg whole.

She looked at Wu Yu and herself. She was thin and short. If she stood beside Wu Yu now, she could only reach his underbelly.

“In a few seconds, he will go on the arena. I hope he won’t lose.” Qing Mang watched them quietly. Her fair face looked a bit nervous.

Wu Yu was like a big brother to her. In fact, she had a biological brother in the mortal world. But since Qing Mang became a celestial disciple, she hadn’t seen him anymore.

Time flew. Disciples of similar power at Qi Condensing Phase had battled it out one after another. Very soon, it was now evening. Clouds and fogs faded away. The sunset glow tinted the sky.

Silhouetted by the glow, the Celestial Battle Podium was like an orange long sword, piercing the heaven in an oblique angle. Those disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect were like numerous ants on the podium.

“The last battle, Situ Minglang and Wu Yu.” After a few minutes of silence, when the audience heard Elder Mu Ge’s announcement, they couldn’t help but hold their breath. Finally, this moment came. Almost everyone was waiting with suspense for this announcement. There were more and more disciples on the Celestial Battle Podium now. At that moment, they could hear their hearts beating so fast because of the tension and excitement.

“Little junior brother, don’t bring shame to master. So long as you can keep your life, you will have earned a lot of honor.” Before Wu Yu got on the field, Mo

Shishu suddenly became serious and gave him a solemn word.

Obviously, since the Sect Leader saved Wu Yu a year ago, the battle today concerned the honor of the Sect Leader too.

“I will!” No need to say anything more. Wu Yu carried his sharp Demon Suppressing Sword and stepped forward. In just a few steps, he arrived in the central arena. Instantly, numerous gazes focused on him. He had attracted great attention when he was the Prince Heir of East Yue Wu, so he was quite calm in the Celestial Sect.

Hope was in the eyes of Mo Shishu, Su Yanli and Qing Mang.

Doubt and contempt in the eyes of the disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect.

While Situ Minglang’s look was cold and resentful.

And Lan Huayun and the other elders on the higher seats looked at him with intense examining eyes.

All these gazes shot on Wu Yu, like numerous dazzling lights burning his body. An ordinary person would fear this kind of intensity and pressure. But instead, he enjoyed it. He had confidence in his Indestructible Vajra Body, so these gazes made his blood boil.

Now, the Wise Stone Body was even more condensed. Under the setting sun, beneath his skin, one could roughly see golden meridians, blood surging through, golden flames forming on his bones, and golden crystals all over his body. He was like the stars in the night sky. A mighty monkey king was burning in the raging fire. His bloody red cloak was dancing and fluttering.

“Wu Yu! You picked up the waste from between my legs! Do you remember your shame!” Situ Minglang finally had this chance. The restless resentment deep in his core was really hard to endure. He appeared in front of Wu Yu as if there was thunder in his body. His Daoist spirit power caused severe storms in the surroundings.

“Situ Minglang. That day I killed two of your senior brothers, but I was not injured at all. Do you remember that grievance?” Wu Yu’s words were like a thunder bursting in the silence. He was quite proficient at arguing before battles. And Situ Minglang, after all, was still tender, so calm façade was completely

shattered by Wu Yu. What was left, was only raging fury.

Hong!

Situ Minglang was angry. All the disciples could feel his terrifying power!

“Wu Yu is so flagrant. The Sect Protector Sovereign is still here...” Those disciples were shocked by Wu Yu’s courage.

As far as they knew, Wu Yu’s best feat was defeating Yu Huaishan. But Yu Huaishan was far weaker than Situ Minglang. At that moment, they were guessing within how many breaths Wu Yu would be killed by Situ Minglang.

“Wu Yu, will definitely die.”

“Today, the Sect Leader is not here, but Sect Protector Sovereign is. No one will be able to save Wu Yu under the control of Sect Protector Sovereign.”

Almost everyone had the same thought.

Because of his agitation, Situ Minglang could not hold his fury any more, which was not a surprise. In front of Wu Yu, this young demon was unable to hold his calm. Suddenly, a magic weapon showed up in front of him, rushed into the sky and fell down to in his hand in less than a second. That was a hardened divine sword with blue light flowing on its edge. When the blue lights on the edge collided, numerous small lightning bolts started to thunder and roar. The power made people’s hair stand on end.

You could faintly see a lightning symbol carved on the hilt. It was that symbol that absorbed the power of lightning from heaven and earth, and merged power into the sword. That’s how the sword became a magic weapon.

Only celestials could use magic weapons.

“Thunder Drawing Sword!

When Situ Minglang held the Thunder Drawing Sword with his two hands, the lightning was wrapping around him. instantly, his long black hair fluttered like flashing thunders, which was really full of momentum!

Wu Yu had asked someone before. During his one-year closed-door cultivation,

Situ Minglang not only condensed his Qi successfully, but also cultivated 'Thunder Control Skill'. His fighting power was greater compared with other disciples at the same level.

When Situ Minglang was at the Mortal Body Forging Phase, he was better at using cold ice and water. But Lan Huayun found out that he had some gift in the Lightning Dao. Plus, for Dao cultivators, cultivating Lightning Dao at the earlier stage was more powerful and more helpful for fighting. So he stopped his previous cultivation and started to focus on the 'Thunder Control Skill'.

Chi-Chi!

When Situ Minglang looked up suddenly, his eyes were full of lightning, and looked at Wu Yu murderously. Without a single word, he rushed at Wu Yu to kill him!

“Heart Piercing Thunder!”

This was a Dao skill!

His one hand held the skill, and the other hand carried the sword. When he finished the skill and infused it into the Thunder Drawing Sword, there was countless spirit power condensed on the long sword, which increased the thunder and lightning ten times. Situ Minglang stabbed his sword at Wu Yu's heart with overwhelming power and lightning speed. If the sword pierced Wu Yu's heart, he would definitely be dead.

This move of Situ Minglang shocked all onlookers. It seemed that with this Dao skill and his body strength, he was the number one among the twelve candidates.

Although Wu Yu was quite tall and arrogant, but he was overwhelmed by Situ Minglang. Condensed Qi Phase is Condensed Qi Phase after all, and with the combination of the Dao and the magic weapon. Disciples from the Sword to Heaven Sect could almost expected that this was a one-strike battle.

“Die!”

Under the control of the Sect Protector, Situ Minglang didn't need to hesitate to kill Wu Yu. Before his thunder sword arrived at Wu Yu's heart, some of the straying lightning blew up the surrounding gravel, charring the ground.

At this moment, Qing Mang's heart was at her throat. Her face was pale...

Wu Yu's counter looked like a little bit too weak. He just held the sword with both hands and swept it.

“Golden Flames Slash!”

His new ‘Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique’ was revealed.

Dang!

A heaven-shaking sound! As if mountains broke down and tens of thousands of kilograms of iron balls fell down on the ground from the high heaven. People's ears were buzzing and their mind was blank.

Situ Minglang was swept away into the sky. The Demon Suppressing Sword shining under the setting sun, and a young man wrapped in golden light... this scene made the whole podium mute. People could even hear a pin drop.

This silence lasted a long time until Situ Minglang staggeringly landed, almost stumbling to the ground.

“Uh...” Situ Minglang looked aghast. This outcome was unbearable, he felt terrified.

It was assured that he was the one who would win with almost 99% probability, however it was him who drew short straw just now. Wu Yu, swept him away when he was still only at the Mortal Body Forging Phase.

This scene, was really unbelievable.

With the help of the blood from the Monkeyhead fruit, Wu Yu finally reached the 9th stage of the Mortal Body Forging Phase, becoming a celestial. He did not sleep and cultivated day and night. Before this, he had 3000-battlehorse strength. Now, he had over 5000. His mortal body strength was far more powerful than Situ Minglang's.

That was why he could cause a heaven-shaking sweep that made Situ Minglang fly away and impressed the audience.

Even Lan Huayun's eyes were shaking a little bit. Maybe she finally understood now why Feng Xueya favored Wu Yu.

Ofcourse, Wu Yu was not arrogant. Situ Minglang hadn't treated him as a qualified opponent. And now, since he tasted bitterness, he would enter a frenzied state. This was just the very beginning of the battle.

Sure enough, Situ Minglang bit his lip until it bled. Then he held up the Thunder Drawing Sword, put two fingers of his left hand on the sword, stared angrily at the heaven, walked in mysterious steps, and yelled, "Oh Heavens Majesty, divine Celestial, great heavenly Thunder, come, enter my sword!"

Suddenly, the clouds became darker. Wind carried the sand and moved the stones. Only celestials were able to control wind and cloud. Wu Yu looked up shockingly. The clouds became as dark as ink, and thunder was exploding from time to time. Suddenly, a thunder snake as thick as a bowl appeared above the clouds, with heavy killing intent!

"The Thunder Control Divine Skill will rend your bones and flesh into ashes!"

Amidst all those changes, there was a sneer forming in the corner of Situ Minglang's mouth. The Thunder Drawing Sword was already pointing at Wu Yu.

[STH Ch 29](#)

[StH Ch 31](#)

Chapter 31 – Thunder Demon Spirit Possession

Translated by Qiling Lin

The true essence of Situ Minglang's technique, 'Thunder Control Skill', was its ability to draw thunder from the heavens.

Of the past one year, Situ Minglang spent at least eight months of hard practice on the 'Thunder Control Skill'. He had reached the pinnacle of it. Now, as the disciples from the Sword to Heaven Sect all watched him enviously and respectfully, he pulled out his long sword. When pointed at by the Thunder Drawing Sword, Wu Yu felt a hint of death as if he was being chased by poisonous snakes or demons.

"Go to hell!"

Situ Minglang roared with laughter amidst the thundering lights. When he pointed his sword at Wu Yu, it drew thunder from the heavens, causing a bursting sound in the air. When people looked up, they saw a thunder snake hurtle out from the clouds with dazzling lights, and instantly rush above Wu Yu's head at an unexpected speed!

"Wow!"

When the top Dao skill appeared, people were amazed! They believed that no matter how strong Wu Yu was at the Mortal Body Forging Phase, his strength could never be better than Dao skills. Now, Situ Minglang was proving their belief.

The fierce thunder snake had exceeded Wu Yu's perception. His dodging speed was far slower than its speed. At that extremely critical second, he was only fast enough to lift his Demon Suppressing Sword to protect his head!

If the heavenly thunder hit him directly on his head, it would definitely crack his head open!

Dang!

The thunder snake and the Demon Suppressing Sword collided, as others had expected, it hit Wu Yu through his Demon Suppressing Sword, suddenly exploded, and started destroying Wu Yu's body. In a very short time, Wu Yu was burned black. He fell down on the ground stiffly, stirring up smoke and dust.

“He is roasted, ha-ha!” When disciples from the Sword to Heaven Sect saw Wu Yu fall down onto the ground, stirring up smoke, they burst out laughing. Disciples from the Heaven's Cry Peak had the loudest laughter.

“He was finished so quickly, how hilarious. He never got to know the real awesomeness of the Dao skill.”

From now on, Wu Yu would be the laughingstock of the disciples in the Sword to Heaven Sect during dinner conversations.

Outside the arena, Su Yanli frowned slightly. She was about to get on the arena, but was stopped by Mo Shishu. He said in a low voice, “Keep cool, he still has a big opportunity to fight back!”

It was when people were laughing loudly and Mo Shishu just finished his words, two things happened!

First, Situ Minglang's eyes were ghastly and his facial expression was full of cruelty! He was still holding the Dao mantra and continued the attack. It seemed that he intended to draw another thunder snake to kill Wu Yu—to completely turn him ashes!

The disciples all thought Wu Yu must have been killed already, so Situ Minglang's action was somehow breaking the rules of the competition. But his Master was here...

The second thing was more unbelievable.

Wu Yu, who fell down on the ground before, suddenly flew up before Situ Minglang even started his second attack. Wu Yu became a shadow and rushed to kill Situ Minglang at a terrifying speed!

Both things happened in a flash.

Both were extremely fast!

True, a heavenly thunder hurt Wu Yu, but it was far from being able to kill him.

His Indestructible Vajra Body had incredible resistance and resilience. Although the heavenly thunder could kill any person inferior to the Qi Condensing Phase, it wasn't able to kill Wu Yu.

“Dao skills are really powerful, but they take a little time to cast!”

“A little time is enough for me to kill you.”

Holding his Demon Suppressing Sword, Wu Yu's strength and spirit revived! Now, he was a peak cultivator. His single strike was as loud as a sudden clap of thunder, bursting out when he lifted up his sword, on which, it looked as if there was a golden divine dragon entwining!

“Heaven Rebellious Dragon Slaying Strike!”

The sword and dragon were perfectly merged in Wu Yu's hand. A golden light flashed! The sharp, overwhelming, and heaven rebellious sword rushed at Situ Minglang – the most incredible thing happened!

“Still alive?!” Situ Minglang thought he was dead and was about to give him a second attack, but he never thought that Wu Yu would be able to fight back in less than a second! Wu Yu's overwhelming and dauntless power somehow frightened Situ Minglang. It took time to call and draw the thunder snake. He had to change his mantra to protect himself!

“Thunder Condensing Shield!”

This Dao skill was really fast. A single mantra could condense thunder from all directions, forming into a thunder shield protecting against Wu Yu. Situ Minglang only used one hand to protect himself, while his other hand was still holding the Thunder Drawing Sword to draw the heavens thunder!

A moment of rebellion!

“Break!”

Parting wind for miles! Heaven Rebellious Dragon Slaying Strike! Wu Yu's unbelievable will and his terrific mortal strength granted his sword a marvelous speed to break the Thunder Condensing Shield. When his Demon Suppressing Sword swept in front of Situ Minglang, it cut away his arm, which

was just now holding high the Thunder Drawing Sword! Along with the arm, his Thunder Drawing Swords was swept away too!

Pooh!

Wu Yu took the chance to kick him right on his chest. His breastbone cracked and he was kicked away to the crowd. People were stunned and scattered in chaos, letting Situ Minglang fall down on the ground bitterly. His body completely bedraggled as his blood mixed with the soil.

“That bastard still looked down on me. He thought his thunder shield could resist me and did not give up drawing in the thunder, even in his last moment.” Wu Yu sneered. Situ Minglang was such a prideful man who failed in such a bitter way. He deserved it. When Wu Yu looked up to the sky, the clouds had faded away—like Situ Minglang, his glory days gone.

The competition was set.

Situ Minglang lost an arm and suffered a kick. He did not have much strength, and was only able to barely crawl up in a dreadfully pale looking state.

“Er...”

This moment was too unimaginable. People, including the disciples, Su Yanli, Mo Shishu, and even the elders, were shocked. Lan Huayun’s face became very ugly.

“Wow!” In the deadly silence, only Qing Mang, that little girl suddenly cheered up, jumping excitedly and said, “Wu Yu won! Situ Minglang was defeated!”

This voice pierced through some people’s hearts.

Wu Yu looked around. He saw a look of certainty in Su Yanli and Mo Shishu’s eyes, a deep look of awe in other disciples’ eyes, and also saw Lan Huayun look at him with indifference. This was an improvement, because before the competition, she just ignored him. At that time, Wu Yu was just a nobody to her.

Situ Minglang was at the edge of madness, struggling with the pain. His eyes were dyed red with his blood. Everyone watched silently, he walked to his Thunder Drawing Sword, and picked it up.

Wu Yu was still vigilant. He was hurt by Ye Guyu’s Golden Flame Spell before,

and that spell came from Situ Minglang. Although he was not allowed to use consumable treasures like a spell in this competition, it would not be surprising for Situ Minglang to break the rules. Thus, even if Elder Mu Ge announced that Wu Yu had won, he needed to watch out for a sneak attack.

After all, what he wanted was not the victory, but Wu Yu's life.

In that deadly silence, Elder Mu Ge understood why Feng Xueya trained Wu Yu. He deliberately cleared his throat, announcing, "The last fight is settled, the winner is..."

"Hold on!"

Situ Minglang suddenly interrupted Elder Mu Ge in a gloomy voice, it was not polite to interrupt Elders. But he dared to do so because he was the disciple of Lan Huayun.

All People focused on Situ Minglang again.

"I have not been defeated yet!"

Situ Minglang covered his broken arm to stop it from bleeding, then picked up the Thunder Drawing Sword. He had a tortured looking when he spoke. His voice was like crying. Obviously, he was crazy and insane. At that moment, he was going to ignore everything and deny the result! Wu Yu could feel his bloodlust!

However, since Lan Huayun did not say anything, no one would stop Situ Minglang. Everyone's heartstrings tensed up again after a few minutes of relaxation. They were more excited now, but they did not know what Situ Minglang was going to do next.

"Wu Yu, I will eat your flesh and drink your blood!"

Not to mention that Wu Yu had killed Situ Minglang's two senior brothers, but also put him, an arrogant person, through such an embarrassing moment today. Situ Minglang would never let it go! All his resentment flooded in his mind, causing him to lose his reason.

"Minglang, he has become your mind demon. If you do not kill him, you will never move on. Therefore, kill him however you want. I will handle the rest for you."

Other disciples were not able to hear Lan Huayun. She used a superb skill to convey her voice to Situ Minglang privately.

When he heard it, all his hesitation vanished. Leaving only the frenzy of hatred! The first thing he did was weird—he pierced his Thunder Drawing Sword through his heart!

Instantly, thunder burst out, drowning Situ Minglang. His body changed into a human-shaped mixture of thunder and lightning. People could only see his arms, legs, and head!

“The forbidden Dao skill, Thunder Demon Spirit Possession!”

With this forbidden Dao skill, Situ Minglang underwent tremendous changes. His body condensed numerous amounts of thunder and lightning, so that he himself becomes an attack.

The overwhelming power scared everyone away. They all saw thunder snakes wandering everywhere.

Situ Minglang was certainly looking terrifying now!

“It’s a forbidden Dao skill!” Su Yanli and Mo Shishu gave each other a look. They both saw anger in the other’s eyes, they flew to Wu Yu. Mo Shishu said, “Situ Minglang, how dare you use forbidden Dao skills in the Celestial Battle Podium?! You broke the Sect’s laws and regulation! You are stripped of your qualifications for the competition. Get away right now!”

Wu Yu also read the the Sect’s laws and regulations before, which noted that among Dao skills, a few were too powerful and cruel. They not only hurt rivals, but the cultivators themselves. Thus, disciples were not allowed to use forbidden Dao skills unless they were fighting with demons. Situ Minglang had broken the regulations.

Wu Yu knew Mo Shishu and Su Yanli were protecting him and he was really grateful, but he didn’t think it would work. It was then that Lan Huayun slightly waved her hand, forcefully imprisoning Su Yanli and Mo Shishu in a frost swirl. Lan Huayun glanced at them, but did not say a single word. After all, she had no reason to.

‘Why was Feng Xueya not here?’ Wu Yu thought.

At this moment, Situ Minglang seized the chance created by Lan Huayun. With a loud noise, he increased his strength by a large extent, becoming a 'Thunder Demon'. He was coming to kill Wu Yu amidst the chaos. Everywhere he passed, mountains and stones would explode, and the ground would be blackened. Numerous thunder snakes were rolling out from him. In front of Wu Yu, he was the doom. Situ Minglang had indeed become much more powerful now!

In Lan Huayun's eyes, Wu Yu would definitely die this time.

[STH Ch 30](#)

[StH Ch 32](#)

Chapter 32 – Peerless Celestial Monkey

Translated by Qiling Lin

Boom!

When Situ Minglang slashed at Wu Yu, the lightning blasted out a burned black gully in the ground!

As luck would have it, Wu Yu dodged and didn't get hurt.

'It's random attack is as powerful as the previous lightning snake. This forbidden Dao skill is truly powerful!' Wu Yu thought. This time, Situ Minglang was chasing to slay Wu Yu. His horrible and destructive power bombarded the surroundings into burned ground. In others' eyes, Wu Yu was scampering off like a rat.

The lightning sword Qi struck beside him a few times, which hit him to some extent, but Wu Yu could not find any chance to fight back, seeing he could be wrecked by Situ Minglang anytime!

In the distance, Su Yanli had gone to go get Feng Xueya. Yet, from Lan Huayun's assured and calm eyes, it was apparent she believed Feng Xueya wouldn't be able to save Wu Yu in time.

"Wu Yu..." Watching that Wu Yu was totally suppressed, Qing Mang's face became more pale. She also knew that the Forbidden Dao Skill was not allowed to be used in this fight, and was so angry that she cried.

All disciples were mute. It was completely obvious that Lan Huayun was allowing Situ Minglang to use the Forbidden Dao Skill. Even a few Elders, suppressed by her power, had their faces turn solemn.

"Wu Yu!"

When Wu Yu fled, Situ Minglang had transformed into lightning to catch up with him. Even as he was concealed by the lightning, people could still see his gloomy sneer.

“Go to hell!”

A devastating attack was coming!

For Situ Minglang, this was the end of Wu Yu’s life.

However, he didn’t notice Wu Yu’s face was calm and composed this whole time. It was at this moment that Wu Yu suddenly released a bitter smile. He thought, ‘Such being the case, I just have to try it. I thought I could save this skill for when I returned to East Yue Wu.’

Since he became a celestial, he had gained an ace in the hole.

Now, suppressed by Situ Minglang’s Thunder Demon, he was finally going to use it! Before being hit by the lightning sword Qi, Wu Yu started to transform, beginning with his eyes!

“Celestial Monkey Transformation!”

His black and golden glowing eyes suddenly burst out dazzling golden lights. During the burst, his eyes became completely golden! His pupils were even burning with golden flames, as if there were two suns raging in his eye sockets!

Then, from the eyes, a golden wave swept over to each part of his body, shaking!

Everyone was watching this shocking transformation.

First, his bones became much thicker and taller with a crackling sound. Instantly, Wu Yu was taller by at least 13 inches! His majestic arms, legs, tiger-like hips, bear-like back and other parts were two times stronger! He almost looked like a giant beast!

His face was also transforming, into a monkey face. Although he was better-looking than real monkeys, he looked very wicked and feral to human beings. Particularly, his sharp teeth were also glowing with golden lights.

The most obvious change to his body, during the transformation, was the golden hair that grew. Not only his legs and arms, but also his whole body was covered with golden hair!

Wu Yu’s pants were stretchy enough so that they were not ripped apart. But his top was ripped apart completely. Looking from behind, there was a faint

golden '卐' on his back, like it was the core of his body. That sign communicated with the heaven and the earth.

Wu Yu, had become a true monkey who was straighter and taller than a real monkey! Under the setting sun, the golden hair all over his body was shining. Although he looked overwhelming and wild, he had a sense of beauty, almost more beautiful than a human.

Thick, strong, majestic, wild, and full of masculine beauty, leaving a giant impact on all those who looked at him! A single glance could have your heart beating crazily. Not to mention looking right at his sun-like eyes!

In front of him, Situ Minglang who was possessed by the Thunder Demon spirit was like a little child, not even half as tall as Wu Yu.

“So crazy and wild!”

This was the Celestial Monkey Transformation.

Wu Yu felt his strength soaring. At the mortal phase, his strength increased from 5000 battle horses to at least 7000 battle horses!

His whole body had a giant strength that was more powerful than 7000 battle horses!

Not only had his violent, and wild power been influenced by the Celestial Monkey Transformation, but also his mind and will, becoming short-tempered and bloodthirsty. He felt like he was going to explode, this was because of the change of his blood, he couldn't suppress his impulse, no matter how calm he was. Although this was not the first time he transformed into a Celestial Monkey, but that exciting and maniacal force inside his body still made him hesitant.

When he transformed in the cultivation room before, he almost couldn't control himself and destroyed the place.

The best part of the transformation was the power, however, there were certainly bad parts. First, it cost too much strength. After the transformation, Wu Yu tired quickly and when the Celestial Monkey Transformation faded away, he needed a long time to recover and regain his full strength. Second, he would

become mentally violent. If the violence increased to a certain extent, Wu Yu might not be able to control himself and something unexpected could happen.

However, his rival was already possessed by the Thunder Demon, leaving Wu Yu with no other choice.

“What the hell is that?”

Situ Minglang was stunned, and all the disciples were totally freaked out. If Wu Yu had any demon Qi, they wouldn't think that the monkey was originally him.

In fact, the appearance of the celestial monkey was visualized by Wu Yu in the heart. It was the same as the peerless Monkey King, but without armor or a helmet.

“Wu Yu, what did he do?!”

“No idea!”

It was certainly beyond imagination for normal disciples, but even the anxious Mo Shishu was shocked. He looked at Wu Yu with astonishment, murmuring to himself. “From the record books, it's said this transformation existed in this world, but it's at least a Dao Skill... How can he use it out of thin air, as if he has the monkey's bloodline...?”

Mo Shishu was already very knowledgeable, but even he didn't know much about it.

Lan Huayun's face was sinking. It could be seen that she was also astonished by Wu Yu. This was definitely not a Dao skill, nor a Forbidden one, but evolution of the bloodline.

No matter how much they wanted to figure it out, they couldn't, as Wu Yu and Situ Minglang had already started colliding and fighting!

Celestial Monkey versus Thunder Demon!

The Demon Suppressing Sword even became shorter in Wu Yu's hand now.

Clash!

Wu Yu, held the Demon Suppressing Sword and slashed at Situ Minglang, who was right in front of him, using the Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique.

While Situ Minglang rushed at him with his Lightning Qi. They sped up from a distance, rushed at each other, and confronted head on.

“Wu Yu, you are really a beast, ha ha!” Due to the spirit possession by the Thunder Demon, Situ Minglang’s mental state was not better than Wu Yu’s. He was frenzied, while Wu Yu was violent!

“Aaaaagh,” Wu Yu panted, as the giant power inside his chest caused him to scream like a beast.

He was violent and angry.

First sword, Heaven Rebellious Dragon Slaying Strike!

A violent strike!

Two swords confrontation!

Ka cha!

All the disciples witnessed Wu Yu’s Demon Suppressing Sword cut the magic weapon—Thunder Drawing Sword—with its majestic power in half. This caused large amounts of lightning from the sword to rush forward and attack Wu Yu’s body, wandering and entangling within his golden hair-like needles, piercing his skin to rupture his organs.

But, after the transformation, Wu Yu’s body was extremely hard and solid. Only a little lightning rushed into his body and was immediately pushed out by his fierce blood. The attack from Situ Minglang had only caused him minor injuries.

Whereas!

When Situ Minglang’s magic weapon was cut, Wu Yu didn’t stop, but kept slashing violently. Situ Minglang never thought that his weapon would be broken. He ran into Wu Yu’s sword directly and was split in half by that majestic sword.

“Ah!”

The Thunder Demon was split in half and flew at Wu Yu before dissipating. Situ Minglang’s screaming only lasted for a split second before the two halves fell down to the ground, burnt into coke by the lightning. They were like charred

wood on the ground with nobody being able to identify them as human remains.

“Finished!”

After killing a person, Wu Yu became even more bloodthirsty, but he could still control himself and tried very hard to suppress his bloodthirst. Finally, the Celestial Monkey Transformation disappeared. He became a human again, without a top, leaving his upper body naked. He only wore the pants that were deliberately chosen by him for the Celestial Monkey Transformation.

On the Celestial Battle Podium, he saw the sun had set and sank among the mountains. The sunset clouds were darkening and would fade away soon, as night in the Blue Surge Mountain Range came. The darkness was like a giant beast, lying across the sky above the podium, creating many shadows.

While the color of the sky changed, Wu Yu became shorter and shorter. His bones and organs changed too. His face transformed back into a human’s face, his fur disappeared, and his skin became smooth again. It was hard to imagine that fur would grow on his fair and smooth skin.

This scene, would be remembered by everyone forever!

The setting sun, a golden monkey, two burned halves of a body, scattered stones... and numerous shocked eyes.

Everything, was silent.

“What the hell, am I blind?” Mo Shishu questioned as he dropped his folding fan and his eyeballs popped out.

There were many people as stunned as him, but not as hilarious as him....

Looking around at the awed, frightened, and respectful eyes meant that from now on, Wu Yu would definitely skyrocket in the Sword to Heaven Sect. Situ Minglang did not kill Wu Yu—his stumbling block, but instead became Wu Yu’s stepping stone.

That burned black body destroyed all myth and brilliance that Situ Minglang had created before. A peerless young demon, faded here. However, a more horrifying demon was born.

Celestial Battle Podium, a podium for master celestials.

Certainly, Wu Yu needed to deal with Lan Huayun now!

“Beast, how dare you kill my disciple!” Came the Sect Protector’s sharp and terrifying voice.

[StH Ch 31](#)

[StH Ch 33](#)

Chapter 33 – The Fifth Disciple of the Sect Leader

Translated by Qiling Lin

It's said that Lan Huayun was a Jindan Celestial. A Jindan Celestial dominated above everyone else, including Su Yanli and Mo Shishu, who were just mole crickets and ants to her.

In the Sword to Heaven Sect, only Feng Xueyan could suppress her.

Although it's true that Wu Yu was much different now compared to a year ago. His improvement shocked the whole sect. Disciples were curious about him, and even awed by him. However, if Lan Huayun wanted to kill him, she could just do so and say it was because he killed her disciple. Wu Yu, after all was just an outer sect disciple.

Whoosh!

Instantly, Lan Huayun stood up from the 'Sword Throne'.

When Wu Yu met her eyes, he felt that he was in a bottomless sea, suppressed by a pressure of a horribly powerful water. He was not able to breathe. Under the pressure of this celestial, Wu Yu felt like he was going to suffocate.

"Lan Huayun, so horrible!"

Because of his amazing improvement this year, Wu Yu became proud and arrogant, especially after he defeated Situ Minglang. However, the horror of Lan Huayun was a shocking wake-up call for him.

"Although I had some success, but as it turns out, there are still many people in this world above me. I should never look at the sky from the bottom of a well!"

Being suppressed by the vast sea, Wu Yu warned himself.

He bore in mind this horrible feeling brought by Lan Huayun. Her ocean blue eyes, cascading mane of hair, and fetching nose were full of nobility and inviolability. Rebelling against her was a shame of blaspheming the celestial, even for today's Wu Yu.

“Wu Yu, you disobeyed our regulations! You killed my disciple! I want you to die!”

Lan Huayun’s majestic and indifferent voice resounded between the heaven and earth. Her decisiveness and unyielding was beyond numerous people, deeply suppressing everyone.

Wu Yu was almost knocking on the door of hell. That dreadful pressure on his body told him that if he walked a few steps further, he would be in the netherworld.

“Am I going to die here?” Wu Yu was unconvinced. He finally defeated Situ Minglang and had the chance of going back to East Yue Wu for revenge. How could he just die here?

Inside his body, the celestial monkey’s blood was billowing, affecting his will. He clenched his fists and teeth. He didn’t want to die so easily.

Through the deep sea, Wu Yu saw that supreme woman. She was cold, proud, Indifferent, Just and had the aura of heaven and earth, A Celestial Goddess. In her eyes Wu Yu was an unpardonably wicked devil.

Suddenly, Wu Yu thought that he must take revenge for himself on Lan Huayun’s suppression someday. It was truly an offensive idea towards the Sect Protector Sovereign. However, Wu Yu used to be audacious. Now, along with the Indestructible Vajra Body, he had the most precious heart that stopped at nothing.

Wu Yu just knew that today he would not die.

“Wu Yu, from this moment, this very second, you are the fifth disciple of me, Feng Xueya!”

Suddenly, a golden light flashed in the sea, like a giant golden Sword Qi piercing and cutting the deep sea. The seawater was boiling in the golden light, transpiring into a thick fog, which disappeared in the sky. The powerful pressure on Wu Yu was gone.

Wu Yu didn’t realize that he was actually still standing on the Celestial Battle Podium until this moment. In front of him, there stood a black-haired celestial, his back to Wu Yu. The celestial put his hands behind his back, staring at Lan

Huayun at the Sword Throne. It seemed to be peaceful, but there were countless collisions going on.

“Wu Yu, kneel down!” Mo Shishu and Su Yanli leapt rapidly to him, giving him an eye sign. Wu Yu finally understood what happened. His wish came true, eventually. This was the third time that Feng Xueya saved his life.

Repayment, was Wu Yu’s principle.

He acknowledged Feng Xueya’s capability and personality. It was his biggest luck to become a disciple of Feng Xueya, especially under the watchful eyes of all disciples here.

He quickly responded, kneeled down and spoke loudly, “Disciple Wu Yu, meets the Master!”

The issue, was solved.

From what had happened today, it was Situ Minglang who started using forbidden Dao Skills after being defeated. Although Wu Yu killed him in the end, it happened in an irregular situation. So, he did not break the rules. Situ Minglang deserved to die, and Lan Huayun was even trying to cover up his disobedience. Even if Lan Huayun persisted, she wouldn’t succeed with Feng Xueya here now.

That’s why she wanted to kill Wu Yu while Feng Xueya was absent.

But it was too late. Feng Xueya had accepted Wu Yu as his disciple. Wu Yu’s status was upgraded greatly. Lan Huayun couldn’t trample on him anymore.

After Wu Yu kowtowed, the scene was deadly silent. He looked up, past Feng Xueya, who was standing with his back to him, and saw Feng Xueya and Lan Huayun staring at each other. It seemed that Lan Huayun’s body was slightly trembling, she was really mad.

“Humph.”

She turned around, stepped on a pale blue long sword, flew into the clouds and disappeared.

Their confrontation had existed for a long time. Today, obviously Lan Huayun

failed. Staying here would just disgrace herself. Therefore, she left. Their enmity increased again.

“Hey Wu Yu, you hid your strength so deeply. Today you really brought honor to Master Feng.” Mo Shishu knocked on Wu Yu’s shoulder and winked to him.

“Senior brother, shut up.” Looking at his devil-may-care attitude, Su Yanli was speechless.

This moment had finally come; Wu Yu was extremely excited.

During his excitement, Feng Xueya turned around. His deep black eyes looked at Wu Yu, it was hard to tell his emotions. His appearance made all the disciples as mute as a fish. After all, the Sect Leader Sovereign rarely shows up.

“Wu Yu. He really reached the sky in a single bound.”

“Who could have known that he would be the winner today.”

“Poor Situ Minglang. He had just condensed his Qi and he was a peerless devil with a bright future. But now, he died young here.”

“If Wu Yu showed mercy, our sect would have one more peerless master!”

However, Situ Minglang is gone now.

While Wu Yu, became the one who was envied and awed by most disciples, even core disciples. He should have a more prosperous future than Situ Minglang.

Now, all disciples watched him become a disciple of the Sect Leader enviously.

Becoming a disciple of the Sect Leader was the dream of all disciples! Even powerful core disciples did not have the opportunity.

Wu Yu thought of his first meeting with Feng Xueya. He wanted to be his disciple at that time, but the reality threw him into the bottomless chasm.

But now, that unreachable thing was realized, just like a dream...

Wu Yu’s heart was totally blank now.

Feng Xueya must have complicated feelings when looking at him now.

But he did not show his feelings. He looked solemn. He came to Wu Yu, saying,

“Wu Yu, you are my disciple now. You not only need superb talent, but also a strong will. Most importantly, you must have an upright heart that punishes all that is evil and praise the good. You must be able to kill demons! To make it clear first, if I know you do some unforgivable things, I will kick you out from the sect and even kill you personally. Do you understand?”

“Yes, Master!”

This was Feng Xueya’s character. He was upright and outspoken. He never tolerated evil and demons.

All disciples witnessed how Wu Yu changed his status.

“According to my rules, since you haven’t condensed your Qi yet, I won’t grant you a mountain nor resources equivalent to that of your seniors. Because those resources can only be used by disciples at the Qi Condensing Phase. Now, it’s good that you became a Celestial Kingdom Supervisor. When you’re back, and if you successfully condense your Qi, I will grant you a mountain and Dao resources.”

Wu Yu understood that Feng Xueya wanted him to concentrate on Qi condensing, and to become a real celestial.

The most important thing is to go back to East Yue Wu for revenge. Thus, right now he did not care about mountains or resources. Dao cultivators cared about their territories, but Wu Yu did not have time to think about that yet.

“But, I can grant you a magic weapon!”

At this time, Feng Xueya said something exciting and enviable for Wu Yu. He couldn’t cultivate the Dao yet. But a magic weapon was still much better than any ordinary weapon, even though he couldn’t make the most of it at the Mortal Body Forging Phase.

Feng Xueya waved.

Suddenly, a sound echoed from the Heavenly Asgard. It was vibration of the magic weapons. The sound became louder and louder. Disciples were surprised and looked up in shock.

They seemed to see several lights piercing into the clouds from the Heavenly

Mountain. There were rainbows appearing in the dark sky, beautiful and magnificent.

Zing! Zing!

In a flash, colorful lights gathered above Feng Xueya's head with a sharp cry. Those were several swords in different lengths, sizes, width and colors. They had various powers. Some were burning, some were crackling with lightning like the Thunder Drawing Sword; some were hidden in the dark like a bloody line; some were as heavy as a mountain!

Magic weapons were soaring in the sky!

Most disciples present today did not have magic weapons. These long magic swords were the most beautiful image they had ever seen!

Wu Yu was shocked by those spirited magic weapons.

Feng Xueya, was really generous.

“Wu Yu, when you become a celestial, the first magic weapon is extremely important for you. Most people only use one type of magic weapon for their whole lives. Us, the Sword to Heaven Sect focuses on swords. In your case, I suggest you choose magic weapons of gold and fire.

Mo Shishu whispered in Wu Yu's ear.

.....

[StH Ch 32](#)

[StH Ch 34](#)

Chapter 34 – Demon Emperor Golden Staff

Translated by Qiling Lin

Numerous Swords!

Apparently, Su Yanli and Mo Shishu had all been through this before, so they gave Wu Yu that suggestion. These were all Feng Xueya's magic weapons. There would be some valuable treasures amongst them for sure!

“Wu Yu, among these 81 magic weapons, there are good and bad ones. You can only choose one. If you pick a good one, even your senior brothers will be envious. But if you choose a bad one, they are just normal weapons, worse than the Thunder Drawing Sword. You only have one chance. Whatever you choose, it depends on your fortune.” Feng Xueya controlled the magic weapons and brought them to Wu Yu.

“It's said that the skill to control magic weapons is called ‘Sword Control Technique’. Only cultivators at Qi Condensing Phase can control magic weapons with magic power. Situ Minglang could only control one Thunder Drawing Sword, but the Sect Leader was much more powerful. He could harness dozens of swords at the same time. It seems that when he becomes a Jindan Celestial, he would even be able to ‘fly on a sword’. Among the whole Sword to Heaven Sect, only the Sect leader and the Sect Protector can do it...”

Wu Yu was still lost in the Dao of the “Sword Control Technique”.

In fact, Feng Xueya asked him to choose by himself because he wanted to see whether he had the required talent. Teaching him to use power was better than giving him power. He hoped that without his help, his disciple could go through hardships and become a celestial by himself.

“Wu Yu!”

Su Yanli reminded him to pick a magic weapon.

“Oh...”

The fortune came too sudden. Wu Yu was still in a daze. So many magic weapons were flying in front of him. Which one should he choose? Listening to Mo Shishu. He had an Indestructible Vajra Body, so metal and fire were more suitable for him. He should focus on weapons of metal and fire type when he chose one.

“Blue Flame Sword, Purple Fire Sword and Nine Killing Sword...”

The name was engraved on each sword handle. Looking at so many names and weapons, Wu Yu was dazzled. He looked around for a few times, and still felt it difficult to make a choice, because these weapons were all appealing to him.

“Which one should I choose...”

The decisive Wu Yu was hesitant now.

“Wu Yu.” Feng Xueya was not satisfied that Wu Yu had taken such a long time. His previous four disciples were all decisive when choosing weapons. Generally, if he was not decisive at this moment, it meant that he was not capable to find a weapon that fit him. This was definitely not a proper behavior of a peerless talent.

However, it was just so hard for Wu Yu to make a choice!

Looking at these long swords, he was really struggling to pick one from amongst them. If it was Su Yanli or Mo Shishu, they would know which one fit them best with just a look. They never needed to tangle with this issue.

“Pick up your magic weapon.” Feng Xueya reminded him.

Given pressure from Feng Xueya, Wu Yu had to pick one randomly. But when he walked closer to the weapon, he didn't feel the excitement at all.

“I'm getting a magic weapon. Why don't I feel as excited as when I got the Demon Suppressing Sword?”

Wu Yu was upset.

He walked to another one. When he saw that long magic sword, he was frustrated again. He didn't feel the connection at all.

“Wu Yu?” Feng Xueya knew there was something wrong with Wu Yu.

“What happened?” Wu Yu stepped back a few paces, directly left those magic weapons and looked at Feng Xueya confusedly. Feng Xueya was a bit impatient, saying, “Why are you so fussy like a grandmother? These 81 long magic swords almost cover all Five Elements. Is it even possible that none of them suit you?”

In fact, Feng Xueya already knew there were two weapon suitable for Wu Yu. They were exactly the two weapons Wu Yu just looked at. But he didn't chose either.

Feng Xueya's words reminded Wu Yu.

He had never thought that none of those weapons suited him. But because he didn't become infatuated with any weapon at first sight, that's why he was struggling so much...

By being snapped out of a dazed state, he suddenly thought of that one dream!

An exceedingly giant pillar rushed into the sky, suppressing the whole heaven and earth!

That was the [Ruyi Jingu Bang](#)!

When he visualised the monkey in the heart, that monkey was holding a staff. Its top and bottom parts were golden, while the middle part was dark. As might be expected, that was the Ruyi Jingu Bang too.

Just now, when he had activated the Celestial Monkey Transformation and fought with Situ Minglang, he did not feel completely free and unrestrained while holding the Demon Suppressing Sword. Because when he transformed, the sword skill that he had cultivated for nearly ten years turned out to not be fully compatible with him anymore!

It was not that the elements of these 81 long magic weapons didn't suit him, but the sword itself didn't suit Wu Yu. This was the first magic weapon in his life. It was the will of the heaven that he should not choose a sword.

He should use a staff, like the exceedingly giant pillar. A staff was suitable for him. A sword was agile and changeable, while a staff was simple and

straightforward, just like how Wu Yu pursued the Dao. He was simple and straightforward. A staff could only hit or stab. But it had grabbed hold of Wu Yu's heart.

For mortal people, a staff was just blunt, not as powerful as a sword, blade or spear. But Wu Yu thought differently. Ever since that Golden-Banded Staff entered his body, his whole life seemed to have been born for it!

When this idea came up in his mind, he couldn't be more determined.

He chose the staff — simple, and straightforward.

So, under Feng Xueya's doubting eyes, he looked up, said with determination, "Master, you are right. None of these 81 magic long swords suit me."

This was the first time he called Feng Xueya master. Of course, he was qualified.

"Oh?" Feng Xueya was curious. He could tolerate him being peculiar, but not him being mediocre. Wu Yu was behaving as a mediocre person earlier, but he was saying peculiar things now. Feng Xueya asked, "Which long sword do you want? As long as I can get it, I will give it to you."

He was confident, aloof and proud. He never believed that he didn't have the weapon that Wu Yu wanted.

Since he said that, Wu Yu wouldn't be restrained. He said, "I want a simple thing. It's best that it is of metal or fire, or of any other similar elements. Most importantly, it shouldn't be a long sword, but a... staff."

"Staff?"

When he said that word, people felt like they had eaten a ton of flies. This was the Sword to Heaven Sect, and the disciple of the Sect Leader just wanted a staff as his first magic weapon...

"What the hell! Did I become deaf?" Mo Shishu almost choked on his saliva.

Su Yanli was even biting her red lips. Obviously, she was anxious for Wu Yu. She knew Feng Xueya's temper very well. The fact that Wu Yu wanted a staff, really... disrespected Feng Xueya's heritage.

Luckily, Feng Xueya was calm. Maybe he was in a good mood today. He

couldn't help laughing, and asked him, "Why do you want a staff? Are you going to play monkey tricks?"

Speaking of this, he suddenly thought of the moment when Wu Yu transformed into a celestial monkey, he was really a golden monkey. Considering Wu Yu's talent, even if he was going to use a sword, that had to be a heavy and giant one.

Wu Yu knew his words would cause trouble. But he was not afraid, because he was really determined. He answered seriously, "Master, I had a deep and careful consideration before I said it. My body has undergone some changes, like the Celestial Monkey Transformation just now. My blood, and my mind both tell me clearly that my life-time weapon is a staff. I know, this is the Sword to Heaven Sect, I know you are the Sect Leader, I know the Sword Dao is your heritage. If I don't choose a sword, I won't get the most of your heritage. But this is my destiny, something I can't say no to."

Wu Yu was sincere.

After all, Feng Xueya was most skillful at the sword. If Wu Yu chose another road, it meant Feng Xueya could not pass on many skills to him.

Feng Xueya was aloof and proud. He was not happy that Wu Yu made this choice.

But as what Wu Yu had said, that was his fate.

Feng Xueya did believe in fate. Coincidentally, with his personality, he more liked those who didn't take the usual way. His heritage had already been passed on to four disciples, so he actually didn't care very much whether Wu Yu inherited it or not. He just felt pity for Wu Yu, because Wu Yu could probably only rely on himself in the future.

"Alright. This is your choice. I am your Master, and I respect your choice!" Feng Xueya accepted it. With his personality, although he didn't feel happy about Wu Yu's choice, he knew that Wu Yu had the right to make his own choice. He could only keep his feelings to himself.

So far, except a few people who understood him, most people thought he was a total idiot. He was just a fresh disciple. His behavior meant he refused all future

heritage from Feng Xueya, including his experience and Dao Skills. He was indeed a weirdo who did not learn the sword in the Sword to Heaven Sect.

Hearing this, Wu Yu finally felt relieved. He knew Feng Xueya was really a good master, because he didn't even interfere with the most basic thing.

Wu Yu understood that his choice upset Master and the seniors. It was the same as when, in the the Royal Palace of East Yue Wu, he followed a teacher whose major was teaching state-affair management, but Wu Yu insisted to learn business from him.

“However, I don't have that type of weapon. If anyone has it, I can exchange it with one magic sword.” Feng Xueya looked around. In this large Sword to Heaven Sect, there must be someone who had it.

“Me!”

At that time, Elder Mu Ge rushed out to the front, saying, “Sect Leader, I have a ‘Demon Emperor Staff’, kept in my ‘Wood Ring Mountain’. It is all golden, forged by ‘Red Heart Gold’. It weighs 1500 kilogram. There is a ‘Firelight Array’ on it. It is enough for Wu Yu to use for up to ten years.”

“Go get it.” Feng Xueya waved. Obviously, that treasure was not quite useful for Elder Mu Ge. He did Feng Xueya a great favor by giving it to Wu Yu.

Elder Mu Ge rode on a snow white ‘Heaven Cloud Roc’, flying away quickly. That was a spirit beast. It was said to be one of the descendants of celestial beasts, but it was stronger, swifter and more violent than celestial beasts.

A few minutes later, Elder Mu Ge came back. He carried a staff, which seemed to be as thick as three fingers, with a height of over two meters, even 30 centimeters higher than Wu Yu. It was about the height of when Wu Yu transformed into a celestial monkey.

“Mu Ge, you can choose a sword.” Feng Xueya took the Demon Emperor Staff, held it and twirled it a few times. He was very satisfied with it.

“Sect Leader, I can't take it. I don't use this Demon Emperor Staff. It's a gift to Wu Yu.” Mu Ge said with respect and humbleness.

“Bullshit. I am giving a gift to my disciple. How can I take it for free from you? Hurry and pick one sword. Don't speak nonsense.”

Wu Yu's eyes were caught by the Demon Emperor Staff. His blood was boiling. He didn't have any interest to their talk.

Here is an image of the Ruyi Jingu Bang (Well one kind of image, there are many different variations, but just to give you an image, pun half intended)

[StH Ch 33](#)

[StH Ch 35](#)

Chapter 35 – Swords Stone Gate

Translated by Qiling Lin

It was late at night already.

The dark sky was filled with stars. Looking out over the endless Blue Surge Mountain Range, it was still ablaze with lights. Numerous palaces were like bright pearls and stars inlaid in the Blue Surge Mountain Range at this dark night. This celestial mountain was like a galaxy at night.

Certainly, only by standing on the super high Celestial Battle Podium, could you see such a spectacular scene.

There were two people standing on the Celestial Battle Podium, Wu Yu and the Sect Leader Feng Xueya. Feng Xueya put his hands behind his back, looking at this celestial mountain range under his control. He didn't say anything. He seemed to be lost in thought.

Wu Yu was playing with a dark golden staff, whose ends were dark red. There seemed to be crimson flames wandering on the two ends. They flashed and were extremely hot. That was the Demon Emperor Staff.

The Demon Emperor Staff was about two meters long, even longer than Wu Yu. It weighed 1500 kilogram, a bit arduous to play with it. But Wu Yu was so delighted with it that he could hardly bear to put it down. He finally found a weapon that really suited him.

Simple, straightforward, violent!

“I can see that you really like this weapon. But you have never used a staff before. I have a book for you, An Introduction to Staffs. It will teach you the dao, skills and essence of this weapon. You can't use a magic weapon without having a basic foundation of it. Although this book is from the mortal world, it is essential to you. If you want to make the most use of it, and combine your spirit with it, you have to fight at least tens of thousands of battles.” Feng Xueya turned around, throwing a five-finger thick book to Wu Yu. With his robe rustling

in the night wind, sharp eyebrows and tiger eyes— this peerless sword celestial's demeanor was awe-inspiring! Wu Yu found it hard to look into his eyes.

Other people all left.

And since Wu Yu was going to leave the sect in a few days, so Feng Xueya asked him to stay. He had important things to tell him.

Once a teacher, forever a father. Not to mention his three-times savior, a Jindan Celestial Wu Yu accepted the book respectfully, saying, "As everything cannot separate from its root, 'An Introduction to Staffs' is exactly the root of my staff. I will study it with great concentration."

It was a pity that he had to abandon Sword Dao that he had been cultivating for nearly ten years.

How could a disciple of Feng Xueya not cultivate Sword Dao! Wu Yu felt guilty for Feng Xueya, but this wouldn't stop his love for the Demon Emperor Staff.

Looking at Wu Yu's passionate eyes, Feng Xueya finally got rid of his unhappiness. Instead, he appreciated him more now. He said, "You are ambitious, this is your most important asset. You are bold enough to abandon the smooth road I paved for you for your own pursuit. Great!"

Today, even the arrogant Feng Xueya also acknowledged Wu Yu's achievement and choices. His sharp eyes looking at Wu Yu somehow changed— showing more appreciation now.

"Come here. I have a few things to ask you." But as his master, he had to clarify the doubts in his mind. Not only him, all people present today were curious about Wu Yu's performance.

"Master, please." Wu Yu put down his Demon Emperor Staff.

Feng Xueya said, "Since you are my disciple now. I need to know your past life experience. Tell me."

There was no need to hide. Wu Yu told him everything, from growing up in East Yue Wu to getting expelled and trapped by Hao Tian Shangxian. The fact that Hao Tian Shangxian raised a snake daemon did go against all the laws of

celestials, but Feng Xueya seemed not to be surprised.

“No wonder. You are going to get revenge in East Yue Wu. I won’t stop you. The celestial road is rough. You will have to fight a way out by yourself. But don’t worry, you are my disciple. The Zhongyuan Daoist Sect won’t go against us Sword to Heaven Sect simply because of the life and death of a disciple.” Feng Xueya said indifferently.

This was different from what Su Yanli had told him. She wanted Wu Yu to take revenge secretly, but Feng Xueya didn’t care about that. Wu Yu was more relieved hearing that. He would not need to think about much in East Yue Wu.

If he wanted to kill Hao Tian Shangxian, he must do it.

As expected, things did change when he became Feng Xueya’s disciple.

“Second, heritage.” The first thing might be not important to Feng Xueya, but when he talked about the second thing, he looked into Wu Yu’s eyes with his ocean-deep eyes. At that moment, Wu Yu felt that Feng Xueya had almost entered his body.

“I know, maybe that servant named Sun Wudao gave you something which caused those changes in your body. That might be a technique to forge your mortal body, which allowed you to get such powerful strength at the Mortal Body Forging Phase. You even transformed into a golden monkey! That technique was demonic-like!” Feng Xueya’s words were shocking to Wu Yu.

“Master...”

“Don’t be nervous. It is your fate that you’ve been through all these. The reason why I am telling you this is to teach you a rule.”

“Master, please.” Wu Yu thought Feng Xueya wanted him to give up his Indestructible Vajra Body, after all, what he had shown today was too unusual. Feng Xueya, however, obviously was not this kind of person.

A bit strict and serious he said, “ You should be aware that our Atlas of the Dongsheng Divine Continent has a very long history, during which there were numerous archaic demons who dominated the earth. There were also many

battles between celestials and demons. Even now, countless cultivators are fighting fiercely. In the infinite history, genius demons are as numerous as the sands, among them, outstanding ones see through Heavenly Truths and leave heritages before dying. There are even many heritages in this Blue Surge Mountain Range... I just haven't found them yet..."

Now, Wu Yu almost understood what he was going to say.

"Master, are you saying that among the numerous heritages in this world, I only got a very tiny part. Maybe I am special in the Sword to Heaven Sect, but compared to the whole world, I am just a dust. I must not become content, arrogant or even supercilious because of this little achievement. I must be more cautious in my future celestial road. Am I right?"

"You are very smart." Feng Xueya was relieved seeing he understood his meaning.

From his point of view, Wu Yu's outstanding mortal forging technique was not special. He had seen some similar ones before.

For all these years, he had seen many young men who were extremely delighted just because of a few achievements and considered themselves as peerless demons. They, however, all died young.

Wu Yu thought, "It seems that my Celestial Monkey Transformation is not as special for Master, the Jindan Celestial. I was even afraid that he would take away the heritage from me. I was really thinking too much."

He really trusted Feng Xueya, but the celestial road was so difficult that only few people wouldn't desire a rare treasure. So, when Feng Xueya saw his disciple had such a desirable treasure, he might want to 'put it away temporarily' too...

"Enough. Go explore your road." Feng Xueya waved. He seemed to want to stay on the Celestial Battle Podium for a bit longer.

Master had helped him so much while he could do nothing in return. He gave a deep bow and turned around to leave resolutely. His goal was East Yue Wu. For being able to return to East Yue Wu, his chest was fired up with excitement!

The blood feud, that unforgettable shame and that vilification... he must let the person pay for it!

For people from East Yue Wu, they would never have imagined that the the Prince Heir of East Yue Wu, who was said to have died in the demon snake's mouth, was coming back!

.....

Swords Gate!

This was the south gate of the Sword to Heaven Sect. The area outside it was excluded from the sect. Of course, he had to climb over thousands of mountains to see signs of human habitation.

From a distant view, one could actually see numerous swords, each over 30 meters high, drilled into a mountain, which formed the Swords Gate. Those were not real swords. They were stone swords carved out of stones. It was Feng Xueya who cut the stones and carved the swords personally.

Wu Yu passed through the forest of numerous stone swords, looking at the straight and grim sword marks, which made him think of how Feng Xueya was flying on the sky and playing with magic weapons; how he cut the stones and carved the swords. He was shocked and awed.

Now, there were sunburn marks and signs of erosion by rain, which meant the Swords Gate had been through many years.

"These were all created by master. It is my biggest honor to be his disciple." Su Yanli said sentimentally.

Mo Shishu smacked his lips, saying, "True, he is a little bit stubborn, but he is a good guy. He has done many things for us secretly these years."

Wu Yu was walking together with them, listening to Feng Xueya's legend told by Mo Shishu. Feng Xueya was the legendary sword celestial among dozens of mortal kingdoms nearby. He was best at using long sword, which turned demons into ashes. It was because him that the Sword to Heaven Sect could enjoy the vast spirit qi of the Blue Surge Mountain Range.

In a blink, they had passed the giant Swords Gate. Looking ahead, there were

numerous mountains in the muddy yellow fog. The mortal world was at the horizon.

“Little junior brother, we will bid farewell here.” Su Yanli stopped and turned around. Walking between the numerous swords, this girl had gentle eyes, which were very different from when he saw her first. Now, she was treating Wu Yu as her brother.

Feng Xueya’s disciples had good relationships.

“Thank you senior brother and senior sister.” Today, sending him off to East Yue Wu personally was their kindness. Wu Yu felt comfort from being their junior brother.

Su Yanli had a cold exterior, but a tender heart. The rascally behaving Mo Shishu was actually very upright deep in his core...

“Don’t go just yet. We got a gift for you!”

When Wu Yu was about to leave, Mo Shishu said mysteriously while waving his folding fan.

Ilesyt’s Note:

Now, I haven’t read any raws ahead so this is NOT a spoiler, just a prediction, but I’m calling them sending Qing Mang together with him, he can take someone with him maybe? I find it quite odd that she didn’t walk together with him to say goodbye, so yeah, I’m calling it!

[StH Ch 34](#)

[StH Ch 36](#)

Chapter 36 – Sumeru Pouch

Translated by Hazel

“Eh?”

He didn't expect that he would even get a gift.

First, Su Yanli took out something from nowhere. Wu Yu took a closer look at it. It was actually a mask. More importantly, that mask looked like a monkey face, much similar to the face of Wu Yu after Celestial Monkey Transformation.

“This is a ‘Demon Monkey Mask’, made from a special material. It can protect your head from attacks. But, its most important benefit for you is to disguise yourself. After all, when you return to the Capital of East Yue Wu, it is better that you don't get exposed too quickly.”

Su Yanli was very thoughtful. She gave that cold ‘Demon Monkey Mask’ to Wu Yu. In fact, that was exactly what Wu Yu was thinking about before, that he should disguise himself first before he returned to the capital.

This ‘Demon Monkey Mask’ made things easier.

Wu Yu quite liked this mask. He put on the mask, hiding his face.

Unlike before, Wu Yu was tall and strong now. Since he was wearing the ‘Demon Monkey Mask’, and was powerful and vigorous now, even someone who was very familiar with him couldn't recognize him easily.

Now, wearing that mask and carrying the Demon Emperor Staff covered by cloth, he looked quite like the ‘Peerless Monkey King’ appearance as when he Visualized the Monkey in the Heart.

“So handsome. With just a few glances, even me, your senior brother, can't help myself but drool!” Mo Shishu joked.

While speaking, he took off a dark yellow pouch from his waist and gave it to Wu Yu. Wu Yu took a close look at it. Its material was not much different from any usual cloth. It was embroidered with a character ‘Na’ (纳) on it. Each stroke

of it seemed to have a profound meaning. The character looked as if it was alive. Wu Yu thought this pouch might be a magic tool too.

Of course, it was a magic tool that could not attack.

“Junior brother, do you know Array Formations?” Mo Shishu asked.

Wu Yu shook his head. It was said that Array Formations was a very abstruse Dao.

Mo Shishu said, “Array Formation, is too obscure. Only archaic demons are proficient in it. Since we are just at Qi Condensing Phase, we won’t know it at all. Even our Master, a Jindan Celestial, can only imitate the Array Formations from the archaic times. Of course, imitators don’t know the real Dao of Array Formations, so their imitations ones only have limited power.”

“Array Formations can be used for numerous purposes. If it is used in weapons, weapons can become magic weapons. If used in Rune sheets, the sheets can become powerful spells. It can be deployed in the heaven and earth directly, or in everything in this world, forming all deployments of attack and defense! The powerful things, such as magic weapons and spells that we are using now were forged by archaic demons, while ordinary things are imitated by master and other Jindan Celestials.”

Wu Yu knew a thing or two about Array Formations. But he hadn’t even condensed his Qi yet, so there was no point knowing that much. He did know the history of magic weapons and spells, but not as detailed as Mo Shishu told him today.

Then, Mo Shishu looked at Wu Yu’s hand, saying, “Ordinary magic weapons, including those in master’s Heavenly Asgard, your Demon Emperor Staff, or this ‘Sumeru Pouch’, were all forged by our Jindan Celestials in the past ten thousand years. They copied archaic Array Diagrams and drew on weapons, Rune sheets and cloth. For example, your Demon Emperor Staff has a ‘Firelight Array’. This ‘Sumeru Pouch’ has a ‘Na Array Diagram’. That’s why the Demon Emperor Staff and the Sumeru Pouch have magical power which is unbelievable to mortal cultivators.”

“No wonder!” Wu Yu only had superficial knowledge of it before. Thanks to Mo Shishu’s explanation, he now knew how magic weapons and spells came about.

Looking at the 'Sumeru Pouch', he could roughly guess its function now.

"Different imitators make different Na Array Diagrams, so different Sumeru Pouches have different grades. Those high-grade ones can even hold a big mountain! Our 'Sumeru Pouch' is just ordinary. At most, it can only grow to one cubic meter. Today, I give you this, so you don't have to carry all your belongings out in the open."

Wu Yu was really surprised. That Dao of Formation Arrays was really magical. A tiny pouch plus a 'Na Array Diagram', could even hold a whole mountain! Of course, the Sumeru Pouch of that high level was a legend even to Mo Shishu...

Following his instructions, Wu Yu opened that Sumeru pouch and put his hand into it. There was quite some gold prepared by Mo Shishu, along with some medicines.

This time, as Wu Yu was returning to the Capital of East Yue Wu, he brought many things, including books and Qi Condensing Pills. Because his Demon Emperor Staff was too heavy to be carried by celestial cranes, Mo Shishu gave him a Heaven Cloud Roc. He could only carry things in his arms or hang them on the Heaven Cloud Roc, so he didn't have spare space for gold. This pouch did help a lot.

"Thank you very much, senior brother!"

Wu Yu quickly put his things into the Sumeru Pouch, such as 'An Introduction to the Staff', 'Golden Flames Dragon Slaying Technique' and so on.

Mo Shishu grinned, saying, "Pity! You little boy had to choose this Demon Emperor Staff. If it was any of the magic long swords, you could've put it in the pouch, but your staff is too long. You have to carry it by yourself."

They didn't carry any swords or sabres. Obviously, they had all put them in their pouches.

Although his staff was too long to put into the pouch, Wu Yu was quite satisfied. After all, this pouch was a magic tool too. Many disciples, even at Qi Condensing Phase, didn't have one yet.

“Wu Yu, you are new to the Celestial Dao, so you don’t know the conflicts. Some demons particularly like to snatch Sumeru Pouches from Dao cultivators. So, although it is convenient, if it gets robbed, you will lose everything. You have to be very careful.” Su Yanli reminded him.

Wu Yu understood.

The so-called kill and rob, just rob his Sumeru Pouch and he would be nothing.

Next, Mo Shishu told some points for attention. For example, not to put living things in the pouch, not to put a pouch into another pouch either, otherwise, the Na Array Diagram would fall apart and the pouch would explode.

“Lastly, the most important thing, the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor [Seal!](#)”

Besides the Demon Monkey Mask and the Sumeru Pouch, the last thing Mo Shishu took out was a seal. [It looked like a tiny sword with a wide edge](#), engraved with the character ‘Sword’ on one side and ‘Heaven’ on the other side.

“You need to show your Celestial Kingdom Supervisor Seal to disciples of the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect. This seal represents our Sword to Heaven Sect. If anyone dares to create trouble despite of this seal, they are setting themselves against the Sword to Heaven Sect!”

Wu Yu took over that seal. It felt cold, but Mo Shishu’s words made him feel warm. He felt protected by the celestial sect. Wu Yu was closely connected with the Sword to Heaven Sect now.

“Master spent a few nights to copy a nameless Array Diagram onto the seal. If your life is in critical danger, you can smash this seal and Master will know instantly. However...if this does happen, it might take some time for us to arrive at East Yue Wu, so you must take care of yourself.” Su Yanli knew Wu Yu was going to a battle field, so she was worried.

“Little junior brother, master is very kind to you. When we became a Celestial Kingdom Supervisor, he didn’t make any Array Diagram for us.” Mo Shishu was envious.

Holding this cold seal, Wu Yu did feel how Feng Xueya cared about him. Maybe

it was his personality or his choice that were appreciated by Feng Xueya. Anyways, it was a debt of gratitude.

“Go! Once you are gone, no one will disturb me from pursuing your senior sister.” Mo Shishu grinned.

“Shut up.” Su Yanli stared at him. She seemed to have gotten used to this. Then she said to Wu Yu, “Take care.”

“Goodbye!”

Wu Yu put the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor Seal into the ‘Sumeru Pouch’, carried his Demon Emperor Staff, stepped onto the white and giant Heaven Cloud Roc. Towards the oriental sun, he flew into the sky instantly, blending into the dazzling sunlight.

Looking back, in the Swords Gate, Mo Shishu was loosely waving his folding fan and saying farewell to him. Su Yanli was slightly smiling yet also worried and reluctant to leave him. More importantly, her face showed her recognition and expectation of him.

Wu Yu did leave with fruitful results from the Sword to Heaven Sect!

“Uncle Sun gave me his inheritance. Master, senior brothers and senior sister gave me valuable things so that I can return to the Capital of East Yue Wu as a new me! They all have high expectations of me. Even though the celestial road is rough and dangerous, they are willing to help me, cultivate me and give me a better future.”

Wu Yu deeply kept this kindness in his mind. He knew kindness and resentment clearly.

Now, he was flying rapidly under the morning sun. Behind him, it was a land of kindness; in front of him, it was a land of resentment!

Where he was forced to swallow the Soul Severing Powder, stripped of his right to be Emperor, and then banished !

Where the Demon Snake chased him to kill him!

Plus the death of his father and thousands of citizens in the capital of East Yue Wu.

Now, Hao Tian Shangxian was still holding a superior status and Xi Fei was getting away with it!”

Without the Sword to Heaven Sect, Feng Xueya and Sun Wudao, Wu Yu would already be Wan Qing’s waste and not even have bones remaining!

Rebirth from a hopeless situation.

Wu Yu, was just like a golden flame, flying in the endless mountains, towards that far away East and prosperous capital.

“Closer...closer...”

“The bitterness you brought to me will be repaid a thousand times over now!”

“The capital!”

One day, as the red sun rose in the east. Wu Yu saw the capital in the morning sun.

He had finally arrived.

[Sth Ch 35](#)

[StH Ch 37](#)

Chapter 37 – Prince Yuan Chen

Translated by Hazel

Although it was still early in the morning, Capital Wu was bustling in the twilight. Looking from afar, within that tall, profound and aged wall, there was smoke rising out of the chimneys. All kinds of chaotic noisy sounds mixed and spread to the surrounding areas, waking up the animals in the forests.

Looking into the interior part, through the clouds and fog, you could faintly see golden buildings shining in the twilight. That was the palace of East Yue Wu, a forbidden place for ordinary citizens as well as a place where Wu Yu grew up.

“Capital Wu...”

At dawn, wearing the ‘Demon Monkey Mask’ and carrying his heavy Demon Emperor Staff, Wu Yu arrived in the forest outside the capital. He stood on the branch of a giant tree, looking at the capital from afar.

“The city looks thriving, but hiding in the dark there are some demons creating chaos.”

Wu Yu clearly remembered how he was forced to swallow the Soul Severing Powder, banished from the capital and chased by a demon snake.

“Sister Wu You.”

Thinking of that cold carriage in the winter night, and that person who chased the carriage. It had been a long time since they had seen each other.

There was a reason that he didn’t ride the Heaven Cloud Roc in to the capital. Before the all-out fight, he had to slip inside and find Wu You first.

“Hao Tian Shangxian has already condensed his qi for some time now, so he is more difficult to deal with than Situ Minglang. I must approach him as the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor and get a rough understanding of his strength before I can start my revenge.”

To kill your enemies, you need to apply your brain. It would be folly to rush in

blindly while shouting curses.

“Let’s go.”

He put his Heaven Cloud Roc in the forest and speeded into the capital. In a mortals’ eyes, he was just a flicker of light, disappearing in a flash. Without detection, he had entered the capital, walking in the bustling streets.

Whoosh!

The capital was very big, but to Wu Yu now, it seemed small.

“Wu You Palace.”

Looking up, the most prominent palace in the eastern part of the Royal Palace was the Wu You Palace, granted by the former emperor to Princess Wu You. Standing there, Wu Yu was a bit nervous. He knew Wu You’s personality, and Consort Xi wouldn’t tolerate her. Who knew what had happened during the time when Wu Yu was gone.

[TN: Previous translations use transliteration—Xi Fei. But Fei(妃) is a title of ruling monarch’s wives (not empress or queen), so we used Consort here]

“Sister, please be safe...” Wu Yu was a grown man and not afraid of anything, even death. But when he stood in front of Wu You Palace, his heart was shivering.

He slipped into the palace secretly. Inside the palace, guards were normal and maids were working as usual. Wu Yu felt a bit relieved. He passed her chamber, but he didn’t see her yet.

“Should be there.”

Since childhood, Wu You’s only hobby was reading. Although she was young, she was already one of the top knowledgeable people in East Yue Wu. Unlike her, Wu Yu liked Martial Arts. He didn’t like to read those poetry and literary books at all.

Study room.

Wu Yu stood behind the yard. Through the paper window, he saw a girl’s’ outline beside the desk, wearing a court dress. She was writing with a brush held

in her snow-white hand. Wu Yu's powerful eye looked through the paper window, and finally saw her clearly. She was Princess Wu You.

A gentle and beautiful girl.

She focused on the white paper on the desk, regardless of her long hair slipping from behind her ears. There seemed to be some tears in her pretty eyes and her face was a bit gaunt.

A maid stood beside her, grinding the ink while wiping tears.

This scene was peaceful and somewhat desolate...

Anyways, she was still alive and healthy. This was the best news for Wu Yu. His tense mind finally relaxed.

Seeing her, that sister who accompanied and took care of him since childhood, Wu Yu's eyes turned red too. In that winter night, she was running and chasing the carriage. Wu Yu would never ever forget that thin and weak figure.

After a while, the white paper was filled. The characters were dense, but there were actually only two characters there, 'Wu Yu'.

Perhaps, she was writing his name to express how she missed her departed brother.

When the news, that Wu Yu was devoured by the snake demon during his escort to the border, reached back to the capital, Wu You became ill and still had not recovered even till now.

At this moment, Wu Yu really wanted to go to her and let her know that he was back, safe and sound.

"I can't. I don't know Hao Tian Shangxian's strength yet. He is still more powerful than me, I have to wait patiently for some time. If Wu You knew about me, I'll be exposed.

Wu Yu was still rational.

"Sister, I will repay you later."

Staying here only made him sympathize her more, but what he wanted now

was revenge! Therefore, after confirming Wu You was safe, he left resolutely. This time, he wanted to show up in the capital above board and confront Hao Tian Shangxian face to face!

Supervising Celestial Kingdoms was between the Sword to Heaven Sect and Zhongyuan Daoist Sect. According to the rules of the two sects. As long as Wu Yu didn't expose his identity, Hao Tian Shangxian wouldn't dare to do anything against him.

After leaving Wu You Palace, Wu Yu prepared to go out of the city first and then return riding on

his Heaven Cloud Roc. He had to arrive in the capital while flying in the sky, so he could show himself as a Celestial in front of the citizens.

When running through the city, he faintly heard people talking about a name—Yuan Chen.

After Wu Yu was deposed, Consort Xi's oldest son, Yuan Hao, became the Emperor of East Yue Wu. In Wu Yu's eyes, that Yuan Hao was a complete piece of trash.

While the name of Yuan Chen...Wu Yu had a bit impression of. Consort Xi had given birth to twin brothers. Yuan Chen was the other one.

But Wu Yu had never seen him before. People said he was missing. Anyways, his existence was confidential in the royal family.

He stopped and listened.

“Empress Dowager Xi gave birth to twins. Prince Yuan Chen was one of them. But us plain citizens didn't know it! No one would have expected that Princess Yuan Chen was sent to the celestial palace by Hao Tian Shangxian to become a celestial!”

“This time, Prince Yuan Chen came back to see the mortal world!”

“It's unbelievable that our East Yue Wu has another celestial! Thanks god! Now our kingdom will become stronger from generation to generation. Those neighboring royals will be scared to death!”

Now Wu Yu understood what had happened. After Yuan Chen was born, because he had some foundations, he was sent to the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect directly by Hao Tian Shangxian.

“Senior Brother Mo said, Hao Tian Shangxian has actually forcibly occupied East Yue Wu for a long time. Even though two sects both agreed to change supervisors every ten years, but East Yue Wu didn’t send anyone here in the past years.”

Because disciples of the Sword to Heaven Sect thought East Yue Wu was too poor and had no benefits for them, so they didn’t bother to care. This time, someone did want to take over the supervisor role.

“The day I returned back to the capital of East Yue Wu was exactly the same day Yuan Chen returned from the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect. I am wondering how powerful he is after over ten years of cultivation in the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect.

It seemed that there was one more enemy beside Hao Tian Shangxian now...

“I thought Prince Yu was the most capable prince in this world. It turns out that Prince Yu to Prince Yuan Chen is like shit to sun! That Prince Yu even raped his stepmother! He deserved to die! It was the heavenly god who sent a snake demon to devour him!”

Wu Yu also heard these comments.

“Even though that snake demon didn’t devour me, I guess she was afraid Hao Tian would punish her, so she claimed that she had devoured me. Plus, the escaping soldiers didn’t see Master save me...”

It was actually good news, easier for him to disguise himself, so they wouldn’t suspect him. Poor Wu You! She had to endure the miserable news that Wu Yu was dead. No wonder she looked so sad.

“Hao Tian, Consort Xi...” Wu Yu burst into anger.

At this time, people in the capital all cheered. It was so bustling. Wu Yu looked up. In the northern sky, a dark spot enlarged quickly and showed up above the capital instantly.

A national celebration for Prince Yuan Chen’s return.

In the sky, constant horse roars shook the world. To mortals' shock, two tall and beautiful horses flew in the sky. They were as white as snow. The most amazing part was that they even had wings! [Their wings were the same as the Celestial Cranes'](#). It was because of their wings that they could fly in the sky!

“This is the Crane Horse cultivated by the Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect.” Wu Yu had read the Atlas of the Dongsheng Divine Continent before, so he knew it. Its flying and bearing capability was similar to his Heaven Cloud Roc.

Two Crane Horses dragged a splendid and magnificent chariot, flying in the sky. The person inside the chariot must be Prince Yuan Chen. It was not a big thing for Wu Yu. But for mortals, it was like a Celestial descending to the mortal world!

A celestial chariot and unbelievable winged horses...

“Shangxian!”

In a moment, hundreds of thousands of people ran out from their houses. When they saw the flying winged horses, they shouted out from excitement. They knelt on the ground, threw themselves down towards his feet with sincere admiration!

In Wu Yu's view, there were so many people kneeling on the street, shivering excitedly. They had an expression of reverence, which was their deepest veneration to Celestials. Once upon a time, they had begun to worship Hao Tian Shangxian. It was because of the mortals' veneration to celestials that Wu Yu was expelled easily from East Yue Wu.

“Ignorance is actually so scary.”

Wu Yu was happy that he finally was rid of the mortal world.

“Yuan Chen!”

In a flash, that Crane Horse's chariot landed on the Royal Palace. Mortals were not qualified to see Prince Yuan Chen's real face. But having an opportunity to see the Crane Horses was enough for them to boast of.

“He returned at the same day. But, with much more splendor.”

Wu Yu distinguished kindness and hatred clearly. Yuan Chen was not his

enemy, so he didn't want to put his anger on him.

“Unless, he goes against me and is on Hao Tian Shangxian's side...”

Actually, this was an assured thing. Wu Yu couldn't change it. He only knew that he would kill everyone who blocked his road.

“Yuan Chen, stop putting on airs. It's my turn now.” Wu Yu adjusted his Demon Monkey Mask, and went out of the city. He then stepped on his Heaven Cloud Roc and rushed into the sky!

The Heaven Cloud Roc was a spiritual beast with a Celestial Beast's bloodline. Its wing was over 15 meters long. It was much bigger than the Crane Horse and also much more domineering.

Boom!

The Heaven Cloud Roc pierced the clouds and stopped above the capital city.

“Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect's disciple, Hao Tian! I am from the Sword to Heaven Sect and have been granted the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor position here. Come out and meet me immediately!”

Question:

Should we replace Crane horse with Pegasus (because that is basically what they are in Western Culture) or keep it as Crane Horse?

[StH Ch 36](#)

[StH Ch 38](#)

Chapter 38 – I Am Sun Wudao

Translated by Hazel

Because of Prince Yuan Chen, the capital of East Yue Wu was in an uproar already.

Tens of thousands of people were talking about Prince Yuan Chen excitedly. At this moment, the city was in a shock again. The citizens looked up and happened to see a giant snow-white roc flash by in the sky, leaving a vast and mighty echo. Only the top martial artist could generate such a heavy sound.

“What a big bird!”

“There is a man on the bird!”

“That bird is bigger than the giant whale in the East Sea...”

For a moment, people were stunned. The news that Prince Yuan Chen came back was shocking enough to them. What they saw just now was even much more shocking!

Wu Yu was representing the Sword to Heaven Sect to take over East Yue Wu, so he had to show an imposing manner. Hao Tian Shangxian should know that the disciple of the Sword to Heaven Sect would come soon.

In people’s awed and shocked eyes, Wu Yu arrived at the Royal Palace. Standing on the back of the Heaven Cloud Roc, he was hovering above the palace.

“Who is this?”

“He dared to call Hao Tian Shangxian’s name directly? Perhaps he is a celestial too!”

“No way! Are there so many celestials in this world? Three celestials came to our capital today?”

More and more people came out of their houses, going through high streets and back lanes and talking about the splendid scene today. Everyone was so

excited. Most of them had never seen a celestial before, and they might not get an opportunity to see one again for the rest of their lives...

Children who were playing around, housewives who were busy cooking, vendors who were selling products, and guards and maids from different places all stopped their tasks and looked up at the sky with excitement.

This... this was an unprecedented scene in our capital!

Finally, Wu Yu was going to see Hao Tian Shangxian.

He was very calm, like a peaceful sea. But there was turbulent magma hiding on the bottom of the sea. Once it exploded, the whole sea would evaporate and Wu Yu would become a ball of fire.

When Wu Yu looked at the palace, it was silent for a bit. Then, there came two horses' neighs and two crane horses rushed out from the Royal Palace. Each carried a person. One of them was the person who showed up a million times in Wu Yu's dreams— Hao Tian Shangxian. Wu Yu couldn't wait to make mincemeat out of him!

The other was young man that looked almost the same as Yuan Hao, but had a totally different disposition. He wore a clear Daoist robe, his long hair tied in a ponytail, handsome features, eyes sparkling like waves, and a slightly cold expression with a faint smile. He looked very effeminate. He was much better looking and a lot more mysterious than that self-righteous Yuan Hao.

Deservedly the prince who grew up in the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect. This was the Prince Yuan Chen who had just returned.

At the same time, Wu Yu also noticed that in the biggest palace, the 'Shang Qian Palace', Emperor Yuan Hao and Empress Dowager Yuan Xi came out surrounded by ministers to the outside. They looked at Wu Yu a bit unhappy.

That 'Shang Qian Palace' should have been the place where Wu Yu would've ascended to the throne.

Wu Yu knew every minister here. They were not vicious and actually quite dedicated to the kingdom's affairs. They just over-deified Hao Tian Shangxian, so they were totally controlled by him.

Prince Yao, Minister Song, General Di, Marshal Wu...

“Hao Tian, Consort Xi!”

At last, Wu Yu saw them again.

Consort Xi was still as beautiful, without any signs of aging. She became more majestic after becoming Empress Dowager. Her eyes that were looking at Wu Yu were so noble, fearing nothing.

As for the new Emperor, Yuan Hao, was just like a conceited idiot with a face full of eagerness.

Hao Tian didn't change at all. He still posed as a celestial of high morals. Now, he and Prince Yuan Chen rode two Crane Horses flying in the sky and confronting Wu Yu.

Even as just a disciple from the Sword to Heaven Sect, Wu Yu still was in opposition to Hao Tian Shangxian. But Hao Tian Shangxian smiled gently, saying, “I was wondering who was being so imposing here. It turns out you are the Sword Celestial from the Sword to Heaven Sect. What can I call you?”

Wu Yu had prepared an alias already.

“I am, Sun Wudao.”

Wu Yu had gone through so much hardships and efforts in order to speak with Hao Tian Shangxian face to face. Finally, this moment came. He was observing Hao Tian Shangxian carefully. Before, he was a supreme celestial. Now, he was just a disciple at Qi Condensing Phase from the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect.

“Hao Tian, is very powerful, stronger than Situ Minglang and me, but weaker than Senior Sister Su and Senior Brother Mo.” Wu Yu's cultivation allowed him to observe how powerful the opponent was during confrontation.

“This means I can't take revenge right away. I need to wait for a chance.” Having waited for so long and Wu Yu being fairly fine so far, Wu Yu was able to suppress his killing intent.

As for that Yuan Chen, he was very intelligent and about the same age as Wu Yu. He might be at the 9th heavenly stage of the Mortal Body Forging Phase, the

same stage as Wu Yu.

“In the Zhongyuan Daoist Sect, he reached the 9th heavenly stage at such a young age. He should be able to condense his qi someday. What a bright future.”

Apparently, Hao Tian had spent a lot of time and effort to cultivate Yuan Chen.

When Wu Yu was observing them, Hao Tian, Yuan Chen, Consort Xi and Yuan Hao were measuring him with their eyes. Hao Tian frowned, but instantly became expressionless, and said deeply, “Your excellency Sun Wudao, I have two questions for you. First, a Celestial Kingdom Supervisor must have condensed his qi, but apparently you haven’t reached Qi Condensing Phase yet. Second, the Sword to Heaven Sect only cultivates peerless sword celestials. But what you are carrying looks like a spear. How can you prove that you are the new Imperial Protector Shangxian?!”

“Oh, he is the new Imperial Protector Shangxian?”

When Hao Tian Shangxian said his doubts, some citizens heard that, and understood Wu Yu’s position. This new celestial was a real celestial, and he was going to take over East Yue Wu?”

Hao Tian Shangxian had created his own legend in East Yue Wu during all these years, making citizens believe in him and regard him as the one and only celestial in the whole world. And now that Wu Yu arrived, he did not care much about agreements between the sects.

Wu Yu had already known that he would give him hardships.

“You must be Hao Tian? Have a careful look, this is the Celestial Kingdom Supervisor Seal!” Wu Yu took out the seal from his Sumeru Pouch. His eyes hiding behind the ‘Demon Monkey Mask’ flashed a cold and sharp light. He sneered, “My strength and my weapon are irrelevant.”

The Celestial Kingdom Supervisor Seal was enough to prove his position.

Hao Tian Shangxian had never thought that the Sword to Heaven Sect would send such a weirdo.

Currently, no one was able to guess that he is actually Prince Yu!

“Now that you are here to supervise East Yue Wu, why are you wearing a

mask? You are too ashamed to show us your face?” Yuan Chen smiled and asked this slightly provoking question.

“Little sissy, this is my freedom. It’s none of your business!” Wu Yu looked at him and mocked him.

As their talk was high in the sky. Citizens nearby were only able to hear a few words faintly. They were holding their breath, so that their breathing sound would not disturb their hearing.

“You called me a little sissy?” Yuan Chen was not angry at all. He smiled at Hao Tian Shangxian, “Senior Brother Hao Tian, I have a request.”

“What is it?”

“I doubt his identity. The Sword to Heaven Sect would never assign a disciple beneath the Qi Condensing Phase to take over such an important role. Maybe he was just lucky and picked up that seal somewhere. So, I want to test his ability.” Yuan Chen’s voice was very soft and tender, like rippling water, but full of provocation.

“You want to challenge me?” Wu Yu deliberately raised his voice, letting every citizen know that it was Yuan Chen who proposed the battle. Having just arrived to pick up his duty, it was better to give the other a blow first..

He never forgot grudges. He just heard people say he was to Prince Yuan Chen like shit was to the sun! So who was the shit and who was the sun then?

“It is not to challenge, but to verify. We don’t mean to go against the Sword to Heaven Sect. We just do not trust your identity.” Although Yuan Chen was a boy, he spoke in a very delicate and tender way.

“Come on! Don’t cry when you lose!” Wu Yu laughed loudly. When he laughed, his voice shook the desks and chairs in the streets. Those tens of thousands of onlookers passed the news from mouth to mouth and quickly confirmed that the new celestial was going to fight with Prince Yuan Chen!

“Prince Yuan Chen, please win!”

“That is Yuan Chen Shangxian!”

Everyone practically had their hearts in their mouths. Suddenly, the whole

capital became completely silent. Everyone was staring at the sky.

“Go down.” Yuan Chen pointed at an empty ground.

“No, up here is good.” Wu Yu was bold enough. He meant to fight with Yuan Chen on the back of the Heaven Cloud Roc and the Crane Horse.

“Great!” Although Yuan Chen was effeminate, but he was also decisive and bold enough. He looked at Hao Tian Shangxian, then rode his Crane Horse and rushed at Wu Yu.

“Senior Brother Sun, I am coming!”

While rushing at Wu Yu, he took out a magic weapon, a long spear! It was azuregreen, like a green bamboo, with whirlwinds circling around it. When he wielded it, storms and winds swept the sky, making his brocaded robe flutter.

“Wow!”

A battle between two celestials! This scene was unprecedented and matchless for people of the capital.

[StH Ch 37](#)

[StH Ch 39](#)

Chapter 39 – Jiang Junlin

Translated by Hazel

Yuan Chen had only reached the 9th heavenly stage, but he had his own magic weapon already. This meant he had a high status in the Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect. When Situ Minglang was at the same stage before, he didn't have any magic weapon yet.

“Thirteen Style Tempest!”

Instantly, in numerous eyes, Yuan Chen rode his Crane Horse, and wielded his long spear. Storms were sweeping over the capital of East Yue Wu. Especially the area above the palace, flags were torn apart by the violent storm. Even guarding soldiers couldn't stand still.

“Shangxian is manifesting!”

Seeing such a vast and mighty momentum, people were extremely excited. They all knelt down in waves. With a reverent looks, they were shocked by this unbelievable power

“Small trick.”

Although they were at the same stage, their strength was far different.

Everyone was watching. Wu Yu's action looked slow, but was actually very swift. He grabbed the Demon Emperor Staff, holding it without removing the wrapping cloth.

“Go die!”

Yuan Chen looked very gentle and feminine, but his strikes were extremely vicious. His spear was targeting Wu Yu's forehead, heart and other lethal areas. When the spear came, the storm was blowing violently. Even the Heaven Cloud Roc was scared.

Boom!

At this time, wearing his mask and holding his staff, Wu Yu rose up suddenly.

He left the roc, and became a golden light as he rushed at Yuan Chen with a terrifying speed!

Dang!

The Demon Emperor Staff penetrated the storm, sweeping that magic spear away with amazing force. Then, he hit Yuan Chen's head with his staff and smacked him away.

All this happened in just a second.

Wu Yu stepped on that scared Crane Horse and jumped back to the back of his Heaven Cloud Roc, putting the staff on his back again.

It was thought that it would be an exciting fight. Yet it only lasted as short as a breath.

Wu Yu attacked and Yuan Chen was injured seriously, falling down from the sky with shrill cries.

Actually, Wu Yu didn't hurt him seriously. It was just a slight touch. They just met, so it was not a good time to kill. Plus, he had no issues with Yuan Chen.

If Wu Yu didn't show mercy, he actually could've smashed Yuan Chen's whole head away.

Hu!

At that critical moment, Hao Tian Shangxian controlled his Crane Horse and flew forward to catch Yuan Chen before he crashed into the ground. Otherwise, Yuan Chen would have been smashed into pieces.

Although he didn't die, what had happened was so unimaginable to tens of thousands of citizens. In their mind, Prince Yuan Chen was very powerful. He was a celestial. But obviously, that new and strange celestial crushed him with only one hit!

Neatly done.

"How come..."

"Prince Yuan Chen is just too young. That celestial who wears a mask must

have been cultivating for hundreds of years. It is understandable that Prince Yuan Chen failed.”

They had to console themselves with excuses.

Now, Hao Tian Shangxian held Yuan Chen and found that Wu Yu just hit him off the Crane Horse. He didn't hurt Yuan Chen at all. Wu Yu showed mercy, so Hao Tian Shangxian had to hold in his anger.

“Thank you for your mercy, Senior Brother Sun.” Yuan Chen paid obeisance by cupping one hand in the other in front of his chest.

Although Wu Yu crushed him, but it was too hard for him to accept it.

The whole capital was bustling. One single fight had made people revere Wu Yu.

This was a very important moment for Wu Yu.

Before, he was like other people in the capital, living in the shadows of celestials. But now, he defeated a celestial!

Becoming a celestial after killing one!

Because Wu Yu showed mercy, Hao Tian Shangxian had to swallow the resentment and accept the damn battle result. He was boiling inside but he didn't show it on his face at all. Instead, he was smiling, and said, “Forgive my bad eyes. I didn't expect Sword Celestial Sun to be so awesome. You are qualified enough to be our Celestial Kingdom Supervisor.

He had to admit.

Empress Dowager Yuan Xi and Yuan Hao looked at each other. They were both a bit upset. They knew this new Celestial Kingdom Supervisor was difficult.

“Mother, don't worry. Hao Tian Shangxian will torture him to death one day.” Arrogantly the new Emperor Yuan Hao said.

“Don't let Sun Wudao hear you!” Empress Dowager Yuan Xi was scared. She even wanted to slap his face.

That was a celestial! It was easy for him to hear that!

Now, Hao Tian Shangxian seemed to have forgotten the previous provocation, as he spoke to Wu Yu with a smile, “Since you’ve come, East Yue Wu will rely on you. I have taken care of it for years. I’ve killed numerous demons. Now I am tired. If you don’t mind, I will call you Junior Brother. Junior Brother, I’ve already moved out from the ‘Shangtian Palace’ in ‘Shangxian Mountain’. I also had it cleaned. It is ready for you to move in.”

Wu Yu knew that Hao Tian Shangxian was living in the Shangtian Palace before. Mortals were not allowed to be there. He didn’t expect that he would give it to him so easily. Was he really prepared to go back to Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect like that?

Wu Yu didn’t want to him to leave so early.

He said, “Thank you. May I know when you will leave East Yue Wu?”

One celestial kingdom could only have one Imperial Protector Shangxian.

Although Hao Tian Shangxian was pretending to be nice to him, Wu Yu didn’t want to be close to him, in case he might feel sick of him.

Hao Tian Shangxian laughed loudly, saying, “I still have some personal things to take care of. They may take up to one to two months. During this time, I still need to tell you the situation of the demons around here.”

One to two months.

Wu Yu knew he wouldn’t leave so easily.

It was good. Wu Yu didn’t want him to leave.

At the first meeting, Wu Yu awed them and confirmed Hao Tian’s strength. Then, Hao Tian Shangxian took Wu Yu to Shangtian Palace and smiled, “Junior Brother, you can just rest here. This will be your place from now on. When the night comes, I will send people to escort you to the Royal Place. The whole royal family will celebrate for your presence. I won’t disturb you. I am leaving now.”

“I won’t send you off then.” Wu Yu had no facial expressions. But he was wearing his ‘Demon Monkey Mask’, so no one would see his face actually.

“Hehe.” Hao Tian Shangxian didn’t want to stay longer. He rode his Crane Horse back to the Royal Palace. Maybe he would stay in the Royal Palace during

this time.

Wu Yu was standing on the peak of Shangxian Mountain, from where he could see the whole capital. In this position, he could clearly see Hao Tian Shangxian entering the Royal Palace.

“Mortal cities and palaces are so small compared with those of celestial sects.”

Wind was blowing on his face.

Looking at the capital, Wu Yu’s eyes were burning.

“I roughly estimated that Hao Tian should be at the 3rd stage of Qi Condensing Phase, much stronger than Situ Minglang. I can’t kill him until I achieve Qi Condensing Phase. It seems that the god has given me a big trial. I hate him so much, but I have to lurk, cultivate secretly, and endure when I am so close to him. It is really harsh.”

“But, this is a challenge as well.”

All of them didn’t know he was Wu Yu. What Wu Yu was expecting the most was the day when he could kill Hao Tian and take off his mask.

Boiling blood and anger crashed together. His resentment was as big as the sea, surging in this mountain.

“What are they going to do during the celebration feast tonight?”

“I guess I have to see Yuan Xi face to face this time.”

The past clearly flashed before his eyes. Whenever he thought of those things, he couldn’t help but sneer.

He was originally not a sinister person. But Hao Tian and Yuan Xi turned him into a devil.

Wu Yu wouldn’t be a human again until he killed them.

.....

The biggest palace, Shang Qian Palace, was the place where the Emperor of East Yue Wu handled the kingdom’s affairs.

Now, there were four people there, Hao Tian Shangxian, Consort Xi, Yuan Chen and Yuan Hao. Even though Yuan Hao was the Emperor now, but he stayed in

the corner and couldn't say a word among the four of them.

“Father, mother, that Sun Wudao is not at Qi Condensing Phase yet, but his power is equal to it. He looks difficult to deal with.” Yuan Chen walked back and forth, and frowned.

It seemed that Yuan Chen and Yuan Hao already knew their biological father.

Hao Tian Shangxian had just returned. He waved, saying, “His strength is equal to the 1st stage of Qi Condensing Phase at most. No need to fear him. He is just a small case to deal with. Tonight, I will suppress him and give him a lesson.”

Yuan Chen said, “True. But I am worried about his sect. If we suppress him too much, he may go back to his sect for help. Then we will be in trouble.”

Hao Tian Shangxian laughed, saying, “Easy. Give him some hardships so he obediently stays on Shangxian Mountain. You are the prince of East Yue Wu, and a disciple of the Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect. We have every reason to turn East Yue Wu into a dependent kingdom of Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect. We also have reasons to stay here forever.”

In fact, Yuan Chen and Hao Tian could just go back to Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect. But since Yuan Chen has royal bloodline, and Hao Tian Shangxian had a complicated connection with East Yue Wu, they were not willing to be supervised by Wu Yu. The only way was to suppress Wu Yu and let him be obedient.

“Is there any way that we can just kill him?” Consort Xi asked.

“Stupid. The Sword to Heaven Sect is not a sect to be taken lightly. If their disciple dies, East Yue Wu will be in trouble.” Hao Tian scolded her.

Yuan Chen said, “Dad, don't blame mom. It is actually quite easy. You can fix it. Plus, I was with Senior Brother Jiang Junlin this time. He wants some fresh air after staying a long time in the sect. As long as he is here, we can handle a ten thousand Wu Yu's.”

“Jiang Junlin!” Hao Tian Shangxian had to swallow nervously when mentioning this name.

He clapped Yuan Chen's shoulder and said, “The biggest surprise you ever gave

me is your connection with Jiang Junlin. He is Sect Master's son and disciple. He will be the future sect master. Yuan Chen, remember, always say yes to Jiang Junlin no matter what he wants."

Yuan Chen smiled slightly, saying, "Don't worry, dad. We have a very good relationship. Otherwise, he wouldn't give me a magic weapon."

There was a bit of sweetness in his words indeed.

Chapter 40 – Devil Dao

Translated by Hazel

In the capital of East Yue Wu, two celestials were just fighting.

Having been through this earthshaking moment, the whole capital city was like an over-excited beast, which was sleepless even in the late night.

In the streets, people were rushing about telling the news. Bustling had never stopped in the tea shops and taverns.

People couldn't help but look in the direction of the Royal Palace with their eyes full of happiness.

The welcoming feast was being held in the 'Tian Wu Palace', which was the highest ceremonial honor since the establishment of East Yue Wu. Because the attendants were celestials and a mortal Emperor, so even the maids who were serving guests were picked from the most beautiful girls, among whom, some even knew martial arts.

When Wu Yu arrived, Consort Xi, Yuan Hao and others all stood up to welcome him. It had been a long time since he was this near to Consort Xi. From time to time, his eyes fell on this beautiful-but-venomous 'woman'. Because of the mask, they couldn't see his expression, otherwise everyone would see his cold look.

"You can leave." After Wu Yu took a seat, Consort Xi waved to indicate the maid to leave. She lightly held her luxurious flagon with her pinky up. With her graceful figure, she came close to Wu Yu, poured his glass, and said, "Sun Shangxian, please try our East Yue Wu's 'Monkey Wine'. This Monkey Wine..."

She also introduced a lot of other things, but Wu Yu didn't listen. After all, he was familiar with everything in East Yue Wu. He used to come to 'Tian Wu Palace' quite often. He was the master before, but a guest now.

It was strange that the host seat in the center was empty. Hao Tian Shangxian and Yuan Chen were sitting on each side, while Consort Xi and Yuan Hao were on

lower seats. Besides the four of them, there was one more person present, Princess Wu You, who was in Wu Yu's thoughts day and night. She was quietly sitting in the corner, looking at table.

With her beside him, no matter what would happen tonight, Wu Yu still felt at ease. This was a habit formed since childhood. She was an older sister who gave him a sense of safety.

Hao Tian Shangxian lifted his glass, saying, "Junior Brother, let me introduce for you." Then he introduced Consort Xi, Emperor Yuan Hao and princess Wu You to Wu Yu. When he mentioned Wu You, Wu You nodded her head and made eye contact with Wu Yu.

Unlike before, her eyes were dim now. Eyes were the windows to the soul. In that moment, Wu Yu felt like her expression suddenly changed, and he knew she started suspecting his identity. He quickly looked away because he didn't want Wu You to recognize him here.

When speaking of Princess Wu You, Emperor Yuan Hao suddenly laughed, saying, "Sun Shangxian, besides you, there will be more guests coming in a few days. They are all of high status."

Yuan Hao was always eager to show off since childhood. But he was always suppressed by Wu Yu. He had been keeping mute for a long time, so he must be really eager to show off now.

"Oh, is there anyone competing the position with me?" Wu Yu's eyes penetrated through the Demon Monkey Mask to Yuan Hao's eyes. Yuan Hao suddenly felt a horrible suppression.

"That...that is...you may know East Divine Kingdom in the East Sea. This is a happy event between our two kingdoms. The Emperor of East Divine Kingdom is going to marry Princess Wu You and Princess Wu You will become his queen. He will come to pick up Princess Wu Yu in a few days with their Imperial Protector Shangxian..."

Crack!

The golden glass in Wu Yu's hand was smashed into several pieces of gold instantly.

In fact, when Wu Yu heard this news, he really wanted to use his staff to smash Yuan Hao into mincemeat.

Now, since the real Sun Wudao had departed, Wu You was who Wu Yu was now most concerned about. First, obviously, this was a political marriage. Second, he knew the Emperor of East Divine Kingdom more than anyone else. His previous army had been fighting against the pirates from the East Sea. That Jiu Shijun was a monster who slaughtered people without batting an eyelid. There were hundreds of thousands of people killed by him unjustly.

Those pirates cut off the business route in the East Sea, and even came on shore to rob and kill from time to time.

Wu Yu once swore to himself that he would kill those pirates after ascending the throne. He didn't expect that Hao Tian Shangxian was going to marry Princess Wu You off to Jiu Shijun. They were sending her to a fiery pit.

He was extremely angry!

But another voice in his heart suppressed his anger.

That was reason.

“No matter what, I am back now. Sister will not be married off to East Divine Kingdom, and even less get in contact with this Jiu Shijun. Bad things haven't happened yet.

If he was late a few more days, he might have to go to East Divine Kingdom directly.

Since the bad things had not happened yet, he should not let anger surpass reason. Hao Tian Shangxian was stronger than him. If he messed up and exposed his identity, not only would his life be in danger, but Wu You also would not be able to escape a miserable life.

He could never let that happen to Wu You.

“Sun Shangxian?” Hao Tian Shangxian saw Wu Yu smashed his glass, so he was confused.

Wu Yu knew he couldn't expose himself, so he thought of 'Atlas of the

Dongsheng Divine Continent'. He deliberately spoke coldly, "This so called East Divine Kingdom should be newly established? It can't be a celestial kingdom. Then where is this Imperial Protector Shangxian from? As far as I know, East Sea is controlled by 'Devil Cultivators'. This Imperial Protector Shangxian is a Devil Cultivator?

Devil Cultivator.

From 'Atlas of the Dongsheng Divine Continent', Wu Yu learned that apart from Dao Cultivators and Demons, Devil Cultivators was the third dominating power.

It was said that the world's creatures were classified into five categories: Ying, Yu, Mao, Lin and Jie. Ying meant humans. The rest of the four categories referred to birds, beasts, fish, and insects respectively.

Apart from humans, the other four types would become demons if they had good luck. Grass, trees, mountains, stones and another other inert things were the same, becoming demons. While those mortal humans who cultivated Dao would become Dao Cultivators — Celestials.

However, the so-called Dao could actually be classified into two types.

One was orthodox Dao, named Heavenly Dao, which was allowed by the heavens. Cultivators of Heavenly Dao could become celestials. What Wu Yu had met before was mostly of Heavenly Dao. It could be called Celestial Dao.

The other type of Dao was the Evil Dao, the Dao of Robbing. Cultivators of this Dao disobeyed the heavens in order to pursue power, regardless of morals and virtues. They could even do things against reason and nature in order to achieve power. This Dao is called the Devil Dao.

It was said that one could become a real celestial once he cultivated Heavenly Dao.

While if one cultivated Devil Dao, no matter how hard he cultivated, he would go to hell to go through numerous tortures and hardships, not returning for an eternity.

But these were stories.

In order to be powerful, some Ying creatures, which were mortal humans, were willing to cultivate Devil Dao. They lived in the dark and were very evil. Compared with demons who ate people, they were more hateful.

Cultivators of the Devil Dao were called Devil Cultivator.

There were many islands in the East Sea. It was said that in the horizon, where the sun shined the most, there were four giant islands. These four islands were as large as one tenth of the Dongsheng Divine Continent. They were called the East Sun Islands, and were the base of Devil Cultivators.

Celestial and Devil Cultivators were all Ying creatures, humans.

Demons were the remaining four types.

Devil Cultivators and demons were enemies of Celestial Dao cultivators.

So when Wu Yu heard that the East Divine Kingdom had an Imperial Protector Shangxian, he knew what it meant. The Sword to Heaven Sect and Zhong Yuan Daoist Sect were all orthodox sects. So it was understandable that when he heard the news of Devil Cultivator, he smashed his glass.

When in fact, the reason why he smashed his glass was Wu You.

Hao Tian Shangxian didn't suspect that, but laughed, "Junior Bother, you worry too much. He is not a Devil Cultivator. Don't overreact."

"Good." Wu Yu didn't care who he is. He wouldn't let him take Wu You away.

He looked at Wu You. Seeing her blank, dull look, it seemed she had accepted her fate. But Wu Yu knew her personality well. He guessed she must have been prepared to suicide.

"Since I am back now. I must save her."

After a while, Yuan Chen suddenly laughed, saying, "Senior Brother Sun, I will introduce a big figure to you today. Don't be scared."

Big figure?

How could a big figure show up here?

In a place like here, they were big enough.

This thing did exceed Wu Yu's expectations. But he knew this feast was never

simple. It seemed they were up to something. It must be related with Yuan Chen returning home.

At this moment, Hao Tian Shangxian and the other three people all stood up and welcomed someone with a smile. Wu Yu saw this and hurried to stand up.

“Junior Brother, I suggest you’d better stand up.”

Wu Yu wanted to know who was coming. When he stood up, a figure arrived outside the Tian Wu Palace. In a blink, that figure stepped into the palace and became the focus of everyone’s attention instantly.

It was a tall man. His height and figure was about the same as Wu Yu’s. He wore a bright silver coat, with a beast fur cloak. On the upper area, there was a piece of fox skin, including a fox head, which leaned on his shoulder. Looking up, he had straight eyebrows, tiger-like eyes and long hair. His face was really manly and majestic. He had a dignified appearance. His every movement was regal. Although Yuan Hao was the Emperor of East Yue Wu, compared to that figure, he was like a rice grain to a bright moon.

His bright eyes were like the starry sky. His evil smile was full of aggressiveness. His big paces all screamed the word: Sovereign.

“Dangerous!”

Wu Yu had cultivated the Indestructible Vajra Body and Visualized the Monkey in the Heart, so his perception was like a beast. When he encountered a dangerous enemy, he got feeling as a cat who’s hairs stood up straight. This evil and majestic young man in front of him gave him a deep feeling of danger.

“I didn’t expect that there were people like Senior Sister Su and Senior Brother Mo in the capital!”

Wu Yu was surprised.
